

LIBRARY OF CONGRESS.

BT 299

Chap. .... Copyright No. ....

*Shelf* , W 6

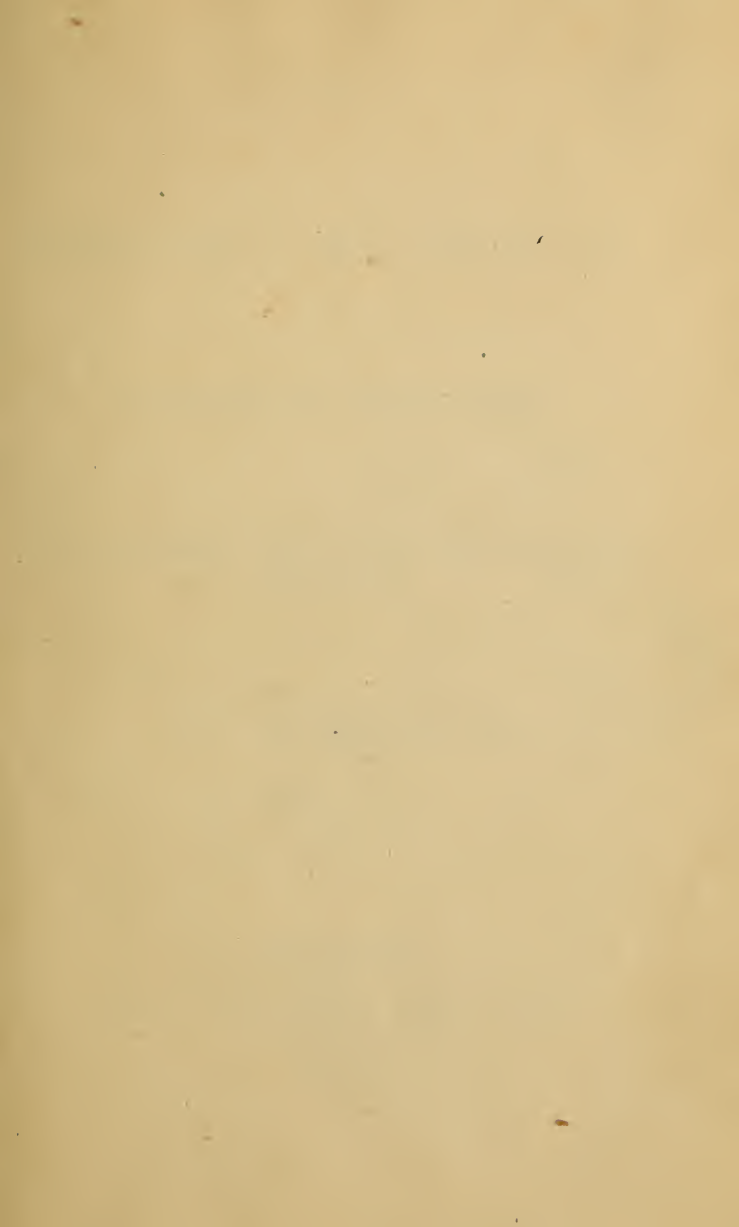
UNITED STATES OF AMERICA.

(Deposited December 20<sup>th</sup> 1854,  
Record Vol. 29, P. 393.)

No. 225-









1854.

THE

# HISTORY OF CHRIST,

ACCORDING TO INSPIRATION;

CHRONOLOGICALLY ARRANGED IN ONE CONSECUTIVE  
NARRATIVE.

WITH THE REFERENCES.

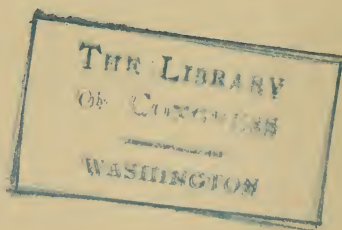
1872

by  
Asa W. Allen

BOSTON:  
HEATH AND GRAVES,  
79 CORNHILL.  
1854.

BT299  
.V6

Entered according to Act of Congress, in the year 1854, by  
ASA WILBUR,  
In the Clerk's Office of the District Court of the District of Massachusetts.



Stereotyped by  
HOBART & ROBBINS,  
New England Type and Stereotype Foundry,  
BOSTON.

Danrell & Moore, Printers, Boston.

## PREFACE.

---

SOME twenty-five years ago, the compiler had the charge of a large and intelligent Bible-class. After having studied the contents of several question books, he proposed a critical and thorough examination of the "sayings and doings" of Christ. In doing this, he was desirous of proceeding, as nearly as possible, in the order in which the events transpired. He then felt the need of a work similar to the one before us. He obtained aid from Prof. Michaelis' "Table of the Gospels Harmonized," also from Dr. Doddridge and others; and thus completed his course of lessons with apparent satisfaction to the class, and certainly with much profit to himself. But *the book*, containing a consecutive narrative of Christ's life, as written by the evangelists, he could not find. It has been somewhat surprising to him that, in the overflowing tide of book-making, the one *he* so much desired should be neglected.

He has, at times, named it to literary men; but, perhaps fearing it "would not pay," it has not been undertaken.

In the autumn of 1853, he suggested it to a president of one of our colleges, who answered, "Do it yourself; you can do it as well as any one else."

He then thought, "Well, if no one else will, *I will try*." He did so, and the result is the present little volume; though he found the task much more difficult

and laborious than he had expected. The object has been to give a full and complete history of Christ, in one continuous narrative, in the language of inspiration, but without repetition, except where it is evident Christ himself repeated. He acknowledges assistance from several works, but is mainly indebted to Dr. Robinson's excellent "English Harmony of the Gospels," the chronological order of which he has generally followed, but not strictly.

There are events in Christ's life upon which every man must exercise his own judgment as to the time of their occurrence; and he can only satisfy himself by their relation to other events. In some few instances, therefore, he has departed from his otherwise *time text-book*.

If the reader should derive one half the satisfaction and benefit in studying these pages that the compiler has in arranging them, he will find himself amply rewarded.

---

NOTE. — It is thought necessary to insert both the genealogies of Christ, as given by Matthew and Luke; for it is generally understood that that given by Matthew is the regular line from Joseph to David, showing that Christ, as his eldest *legal* son, was heir to his father David's throne; and that according to Luke is the regular line from Mary, through her father Heli, up to David, also. It is supposed Heli had no son. The inheritance, therefore, and consequently the genealogical line, would fall to his eldest daughter, while she remained single, but on her marriage it fell to her husband. Hence, in the tables, Joseph, the husband of Mary, would be registered "the son of Heli." Thus, Christ is a legal descendant and "heir of David," through Joseph, and a blood descendant through Mary and Heli.

# CONTENTS.

---

## CHAPTER I.

	Page
The Genealogies of Christ. . . . .	5

## CHAPTER II.

Zachariah sees an angel in the Temple, who announces the birth of John — Christ's birth announced to Mary — She visits Elizabeth. . . . .	8
---	---

## CHAPTER III.

Birth of John — Birth of Christ — His birth announced to the shepherds — His circumcision — Simeon blesses Christ and prophesies — Anna blesses Christ. . . . .	13
---	----

## CHAPTER IV.

Wise men from the east visit Christ — The children slain by Herod — Christ with the doctors in the temple. . . . .	18
--	----

## CHAPTER V.

The preaching of John the Baptist — Christ baptized. . . . .	21
--	----

## CHAPTER VI.

Christ tempted in the wilderness — John the Evangelist's testimony of Christ. . . . .	24
---	----

## CHAPTER VII.

John's testimony of Christ, continued. . . . .	27
--	----

## CHAPTER VIII.

Jesus attends a marriage, and turns water into wine — Goes up to the first passover after his baptism. . . . . 30

## CHAPTER IX.

Christ converses with and instructs Nicodemus — Travels in Judea. . . . . 32

## CHAPTER X.

John the Baptist bears testimony of Christ — Reproves Herod, and is cast into prison. . . . . 34

## CHAPTER XI.

Christ leaves Judea to return to Galilee — Stops on the way, and converses with the Samaritan woman at Jacob's well. . . . 36

## CHAPTER XII.

Christ arrives in Galilee — Preaches in the synagogue with great success — Heals a nobleman's son — Comes to Nazareth — Preaches in the synagogue — Is rejected by the Jews. . . . 39

## CHAPTER XIII.

He leaves Nazareth and goes down again to Capernaum — Preaches out of a boat at the sea-side — The great draught of fishes — Calls Peter, Andrew, James, and John — Heals a demoniac — Heals Simon Peter's wife's mother. . . . . 42

## CHAPTER XIV.

Christ heals a leper — Heals a palsied man. . . . . 45

## CHAPTER XV.

Christ calls Levi — Goes up to Jerusalem to the second Passover — Heals a man at the pool — Explains his character in the Temple. . . . . 48



CHAPTER XVI.

The disciples pluck the ears of corn—Christ restores the withered hand, and heals many. . . . . 52

CHAPTER XVII.

Christ appoints the twelve apostles—Heals many—Commences his sermon on the mount. . . . . 55

CHAPTER XVIII.

Sermon continued. . . . . 58

CHAPTER XIX.

Sermon continued. . . . . 61

CHAPTER XX.

Sermon continued. . . . . 64

CHAPTER XXI.

Christ heals the centurion's servant—Raises to life the widow's son—and answers John's messengers. . . . . 68

CHAPTER XXII.

Christ vindicates the woman who washed his feet in the Pharisee's house. . . . . 72

CHAPTER XXIII.

Christ heals a demoniac, and is accused of casting out devils through Beelzebub. . . . . 74

CHAPTER XXIV.

The foolish rich man—The faithful servant rewarded, and the unfaithful punished—The people discern not the signs of the times. . . . . 79

## CHAPTER XXV.

The barren fig-tree—The parable of the sower, and the application. . . . . 81

## CHAPTER XXVI.

The tares of the field—The mustard-seed—The leaven in the meal—The treasure in the field—The pearls—The net—Explanation. . . . . 85

## CHAPTER XXVII.

Christ stills the tempest—Met by demoniacs—The swine perish—Returns to his own city. . . . . 88

## CHAPTER XXVIII.

The Pharisees complain that he ate with publicans and sinners—The parable of the new and old cloth, and new and old bottles—A woman touches his garment, and is healed—He raises Jairus' daughter. . . . . 91

## CHAPTER XXIX.

Restores sight to two blind men—Is rejected in his own country—Empowers the apostles, and orders them out to preach—Exhorts them. . . . . 95

## CHAPTER XXX.

His charge to the apostles. . . . . 98

## CHAPTER XXXI.

Sends forth the apostles—John the Baptist slain in prison. . . 100

## CHAPTER XXXII.

The apostles return—The five thousand fed—Christ walks on the sea. . . . . 102

## CHAPTER XXXIII.

Christ teaches the people—Explains his relation to the Father—  
Shows that he is the bread of God which came down from  
heaven. . . . . 105

## CHAPTER XXXIV.

The Pharisees complain that the disciples eat with unwashed hands  
—Christ explains what defiles the man. . . . . 109

## CHAPTER XXXV.

The Syrophenician woman's daughter healed—The deaf and dumb  
man healed—The seventy sent out—The four thousand fed, 112

## CHAPTER XXXVI.

The Pharisees ask a sign—The disciples forget to take bread—A  
blind man receives his sight—Christ inquires who men say he is  
—Reproves Peter. . . . . 116

## CHAPTER XXXVII.

Christ transfigured—Casts an evil spirit out of a man's son. . 119

## CHAPTER XXXVIII.

Tribute-money found in the fish's mouth—The disciples taught  
humility, and warned against offences. . . . . 123

## CHAPTER XXXIX.

The seventy return and report—Christ denounces the wicked cities  
—Invites all to come to him—Instructs the disciples as to of-  
fences and forgiveness. . . . . 126

## CHAPTER XL.

The servant forgiven who owed ten thousand talents—Jesus goes  
up to the feast of tabernacles—On their way the apostles ask  
to command fire from heaven—Ten lepers cleansed . . . 129

## CHAPTER XLI.

Christ teaches in the temple. . . . . 132

## CHAPTER XLII.

The woman taken in adultery — Christ continues preaching in the temple. . . . . 135

## CHAPTER XLIII.

Christ continues his instructions in the temple. . . . . 138

## CHAPTER XLIV.

Christ tempted by a lawyer — The good Samaritan — Martha encumbered with serving — Sight given to a man who was born blind — The Pharisees murmur, and cast the man out of the synagogue. . . . . 140

## CHAPTER XLV.

The sheep-fold and door. . . . . 145

## CHAPTER XLVI.

Lazarus raised from the dead. . . . . 148

## CHAPTER XLVII.

Christ heals a woman in the synagogue — Travels toward Jerusalem — Exhorts to enter in at the strait gait — Heals a man of the dropsy. . . . . 152

## CHAPTER XLVIII.

Christ exhorts to be humble by the parable of taking seats at feasts — The parable of the supper — Exhorts to forsake all and follow him. . . . . 155

## CHAPTER XLIX.

The parable of the lost sheep — Ten pieces of silver — The prodigal son. . . . . 157

## CHAPTER L.

The unjust steward — The parable of the rich man and Lazarus. 160

## CHAPTER LI.

The unjust judge — The Pharisee and publican — Instruction relative to putting away a wife — Little children brought to Christ — The young ruler inquires how to obtain eternal life. . . . 163

## CHAPTER LII.

The laborers in the vineyard — Christ foretells his death — The two disciples ask to sit at his right hand. . . . . 167

## CHAPTER LIII.

Jesus gives sight to a blind man at Jericho — Calls Zaccheus — The ten pounds given to ten servants. . . . . 170

## CHAPTER LIV.

Christ rides into Jerusalem in triumph — Children praise him in the temple. . . . . 173

## CHAPTER LV.

The barren fig-tree — Christ casts out those that sold doves, &c. — Asks from whence was the baptism of John — The two sons ordered into the vineyard — The vineyard let out to wicked husbandmen. . . . . 177

## CHAPTER LVI.

The marriage-supper of the king's son — Christ is questioned whether it be lawful to pay tribute to Cæsar — The seven brethren who had one wife. . . . . 181

## CHAPTER LVII.

A Pharisee lawyer asks which is the greatest commandment—Christ asks what they think of the Messiah—Condemns the scribes and Pharisees as hypocrites. . . . . 184

## CHAPTER LVIII.

The widow's mite—Greeks inquire after Jesus—Christ teaches concerning himself. . . . . 189

## CHAPTER LIX.

The disciples call his attention to the temple—He prophesies the destruction of the Jewish polity. . . . . 192

## CHAPTER LX.

Christ foretells the destruction of Jerusalem and the final dissolution—The ten virgins. . . . . 195

## CHAPTER LXI.

The parable of the talents—The sheep and the goats. . . . 198

## CHAPTER LXII.

Mary anoints Jesus in the house of Simon the leper—Judas covenants with the chief priests to betray Christ—The disciples strive who shall be greatest—Are reproved by Christ. . . . 201

## CHAPTER LXIII.

Christ washes the disciples' feet—They sit down at the passover—Judas receives the sop and goes out—The supper instituted. 204

## CHAPTER LXIV.

Christ addresses his disciples—The Comforter promised. . . . 209

## CHAPTER LXV.

Christ the vine—The disciples exhorted to love one another—Warned of persecution. . . . . 212

## CHAPTER LXVI.

The Comforter's office—Christ further exhorts the disciples. . . 214

## CHAPTER LXVII.

Christ's prayer. . . . . 217

## CHAPTER LXVIII.

Jesus goes out to the garden of Gethsemane—His prayers and agony—Judas comes with a band—Peter cuts off the ear of the high priest's servant—Christ is lead away to Annas, who sends him to Caiaphas. . . . . 220

## CHAPTER LXIX.

Peter denies that he knew Christ—Christ condemned in the council—Is carried to Pilate. . . . . 223

## CHAPTER LXX.

Christ examined by Pilate, and declared innocent—Is sent to Herod—Sent back to Pilate—After a long examination is declared innocent, but condemned from the influence of the priests and the multitude. . . . . 226

## CHAPTER LXXI.

Judas returns the money and hangs himself—Christ is led away to be crucified—Women lament him. . . . . 231

## CHAPTER LXXII.

There is an earthquake, and the graves open, &c.—The soldiers break the legs of the thieves, but pierce Christ with a spear—He is taken down from the cross and laid in the sepulchre. . . 236

## CHAPTER LXXIII.

A watch set at the sepulchre—There is an earthquake—Women come to the sepulchre, and find the stone rolled away and the body of Christ gone—Mary Magdalene runs to inform the disciples—

---

Christ shows himself to the other women — Peter and John go to the sepulchre — Mary goes with them — They return, but Mary remains, and Christ shows himself to her. . . . . 239

## CHAPTER LXXIV.

Christ shows himself to two of his disciples at Emmaus — He appears in the room with his disciples — Thomas doubts. . . . 243

## CHAPTER LXXV.

Christ at the sea of Galilee — Draught of fishes — Questions Peter as to his love — Meets a large body of disciples on the mount — The apostles return to Jerusalem — Are commissioned — Christ ascends to heaven. . . . . 247



# THE HISTORY OF CHRIST.

---

## CHAPTER I.

### *The Genealogies of Christ.*

#### GENEALOGICAL LINE ACCORDING TO MATTHEW.

Mt. 1. 1 THE book of the generation of Jesus Christ, the son of David, the Son of Abraham.

2 Abraham begat Isaac, and Isaac begat Jacob;  
3 and Jacob begat Judah and his brethren; and  
Judah begat Pharez and Zarah of Tamar; and  
Pharez begat Hezron; and Hezron begat Ram;  
4 and Ram begat Aminadab; and Aminadab begat  
5 Nahshon; and Nahshon begat Salmon; and Sal-  
mon begat Boaz of Rahab; and Boaz begat Obed  
6 of Ruth; and Obed begat Jesse; and Jesse begat  
David the king; and David the king begat Solo-  
7 mon of her that had been the wife of Uriah; and  
Solomon begat Rehoboam; and Rehoboam begat  
8 Abijah; and Abijah begat Asa; and Asa begat Je-  
hoshaphat; and Jehoshaphat begat Joram; and  
9 Joram begat Uzziah; and Uzziah begat Jotham;  
and Jotham begat Ahaz; and Ahaz begat Heze-  
10 kiah; and Hezekiah begat Manasseh; and Ma-  
nasseh begat Amon; and Amon begat Josiah;

Mt.1.11 and Josiah begat Jeconiah and his brethren,  
 about the time they were carried away to Baby-  
 12 lon: and, after they were brought to Babylon,  
 Jeconiah begat Salathiel; and Salathiel begat  
 13 Zerubbabel; and Zerubbabel begat Abiud; and  
 Abiud begat Eliakim; and Eliakim begat Azor;  
 14 and Azor begat Zadoc; and Zadoc begat Achim;  
 15 and Achim begat Eliud; and Eliud begat Elea-  
 zar; and Eleazar begat Matthan; and Matthan  
 16 begat Jacob. And Jacob begat Joseph the hus-  
 band of Mary, of whom was born Jesus, who is  
 called Christ.

17 So all the generations from Abraham to David  
 are fourteen generations; and from David until  
 the carrying away into Babylon are fourteen  
 generations; and from the carrying away into  
 Babylon unto Christ are fourteen generations.

GENEALOGICAL LINE ACCORDING TO LUKE.

Lk.3.23 *Jesus Christ* (as was supposed) was the son  
 24 of Joseph, which was the son of Heli, which was  
 the son of Matthat, which was the son of Levi,  
 which was the son of Melchi, which was the son  
 25 of Janna, which was the son of Joseph, which  
 was the son of Mattathias, which was the son of  
 Amos, which was the son of Nahum, which was  
 the son of Esli, which was the son of Naggai,  
 26 which was the son of Maath, which was the son  
 of Mattathias, which was the son of Shimei,  
 which was the son of Joseph, which was the son

Lk.3.27 of Judah, which was the son of Joanna, which was the son of Rhesa, which was the son of Zerubbabel, which was the son of Salathiel, which  
28 was the son of Neri, which was the son of Melchi, which was the son of Addi, which was the son of Cosam, which was the son of Elmodam,  
29 which was the son of Er, which was the son of Joses, which was the son of Eliezer, which was the son of Jorim, which was the son of Matthat,  
30 which was the son of Levi, which was the son of Simeon, which was the son of Judah, which was the son of Joseph, which was the son of  
31 Jonan, which was the son of Eliakim, which was the son of Meleah, which was the son of Mainan, which was the son of Mattatha, which was the son of Nathan, which was the son of David,  
32 which was the son of Jesse, which was the son of Obed, which was the son of Boaz, which was the son of Salmon, which was the son of Nahshon,  
33 which was the son of Aminadab, which was the son of Ram, which was the son of Hezron, which was the son of Pharez, which was the son of Judah,  
34 which was the son of Jacob, which was the son of Isaac, which was the son of Abraham, which was the son of Terah, which was the son of Nahor,  
35 which was the son of Serug, which was the son of 'Reu, which was the son of Peleg, which was the son of Eber, which was the son of Salah,  
36 which was the son of Cainan, which was the son of Arphaxad, which was the son of Shem, which

was the son of Noah, which was the son of La-  
Lk 3. 37 mech, which was the son of Methuselah, which was  
the son of Enoch, which was the son of Jared, which  
was the son of Mahalaleel, which was the son of  
38 Cainan, which was the son of Enos, which was the  
son of Seth, which was the son of Adam, which was  
the son of God.

---

## CHAPTER II.

*Zechariah sees an angel in the Temple, who announces  
the birth of John — Christ's birth announced to Mary  
— She visits Elizabeth.*

Lk. 1. 5 THERE was in the days of Herod, the king of  
Judea, a certain priest named Zechariah, of the  
course of Abijah; and his wife was of the daugh-  
6 ters of Aaron, and her name was Elizabeth. And  
they were both righteous before God, walking in  
all the commandments and ordinances of the Lord  
7 blameless. And they had no child, because that  
Elizabeth was barren, and they both werẽ now well  
8 stricken in years. And it came to pass that while  
he executed the priest's office before God, in the  
9 order of his course, according to the custom of the  
priest's office, his lot was to burn incense when he  
10 went into the temple of the Lord. And the whole  
multitude of the people were praying without, at  
11 the time of incense. And there appeared unto him  
an angel of the Lord, standing on the right side of  
12 the altar of incense. And when Zechariah saw

- Lk. 1.13 him, he was troubled, and fear fell upon him. But the angel said unto him, Fear not, Zechariah : for thy prayer is heard ; and thy wife Elizabeth shall bear thee a son, and thou shalt call his name John.
- 14 And thou shalt have joy and gladness : and many  
15 shall rejoice at his birth. For he shall be great in the sight of the Lord, and shall drink neither wine nor strong drink ; and he shall be filled with the  
16 Holy Ghost, even from his mother's womb. And many of the children of Israel shall he turn to the  
17 Lord their God. And he shall go before him in the spirit and power of Elijah, to turn the hearts of the fathers to the children, and the disobedient to the wisdom of the just ; to make ready a people prepared for the Lord.
- 18 And Zechariah said unto the angel, Whereby shall I know this ? for I am an old man, and my  
19 wife well stricken in years. And the angel answering, said unto him, I am Gabriel, that stand in the presence of God ; and am sent to speak unto thee,  
20 and to show thee these glad tidings. And, behold, thou shalt be dumb, and not able to speak, until the day that these things shall be performed, because thou believest not my words, which shall be  
21 fulfilled in their season. And the people waited for Zechariah, and marvelled that he tarried so long in  
22 the temple. And when he came out, he could not speak unto them : and they perceived that he had seen a vision in the temple : for he beckoned unto  
23 them, and remained speechless. And it came to

pass, that, as soon as the days of his ministration were accomplished, he departed to his own house.

Lk. 1.24 And after those days, his wife Elizabeth conceived,  
25 and hid herself five months, saying, Thus hath the Lord dealt with me, in the days wherein he looked on me, to take away my reproach among men.

26 And in the sixth month, the angel Gabriel was sent from God unto a city of Galilee, named Nazareth, to a virgin espoused to a man whose name was Joseph, of the house of David; and the virgin's name was Mary. And the angel came in unto her, and said, Hail, thou that art highly favored, the Lord is with thee: blessed art thou  
29 among women. And when she saw him, she was troubled at his saying, and cast in her mind what  
30 manner of salutation this should be. And the angel said unto her, Fear not, Mary: for thou hast  
31 found favor with God. And, behold, thou shalt conceive in thy womb, and bring forth a son, and  
32 shalt call his name JESUS. He shall be great, and shall be called the Son of the Highest: and the Lord God shall give unto him the throne of his  
33 father David. And he shall reign over the house of Jacob forever; and of his kingdom there shall  
34 be no end. Then said Mary unto the angel, How  
35 shall this be, seeing I know not a man? And the angel answered and said unto her, The Holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and the power of the Highest shall overshadow thee: therefore, also, that holy thing which shall be born of thee shall be called the Son of



Lk. 1.36 God. And, behold thy cousin Elizabeth, she hath also conceived a son in her old age : and this is the  
37 sixth month with her, who was called barren. For  
38 with God nothing shall be impossible. And Mary said, Behold the handmaid of the Lord ; be it unto me according to thy word. And the angel departed  
39 from her. And Mary arose in those days, and went into the hill-country with haste, into a city of  
40 Judah. And entered into the house of Zechariah,  
41 and saluted Elizabeth. And it came to pass, that, when Elizabeth heard the salutation of Mary, the babe leaped in her womb ; and Elizabeth was filled  
42 with the Holy Ghost : and she spoke out with a loud voice, and said, Blessed art thou among women, and blessed is the fruit of thy womb.  
43 And whence is this to me, that the mother of my  
44 Lord should come to me ? For, lo, as soon as the voice of thy salutation sounded in mine ears, the  
45 babe leaped in my womb for joy. And blessed is she that believed : for there shall be a performance of those things which were told her from the Lord.  
46 And Mary said, My soul doth magnify the Lord.  
47 And my spirit hath rejoiced in God my Saviour.  
48 For he hath regarded the low estate of his handmaiden ; for, behold, from henceforth, all generations shall call me blessed. For he that is mighty  
49 hath done to me great things ; and holy is his  
50 name. And his mercy is on them that fear him  
51 from generation to generation. He hath showed strength with his arm ; he hath scattered the proud

Lk. 1.52 in the imagination of their hearts. He hath put  
down the mighty from their seats, and exalted them  
53 of low degree. He hath filled the hungry with  
good things; and the rich he hath sent empty  
54 away. He hath holpen his servant Israel, in re-  
55 membrance of his mercy; as he spake to our fa-  
56 thers, to Abraham, and to his seed forever. And  
Mary abode with her about three months, and  
returned to her own house. *And having been*  
Mt. 1.18 espoused to Joseph, before they came together,  
she was found with child of the Holy Ghost.  
19 Then Joseph, her *espoused* husband, being a just  
man, and not willing to make her a public example,  
20 was minded to put her away privily. But, while  
he thought on these things, behold, the angel of the  
Lord appeared unto him in a dream, saying, Joseph,  
thou son of David, fear not to take unto thee Mary.  
thy wife; for that which is conceived in her is of  
21 the Holy Ghost. And she shall bring forth a son,  
and thou shalt call his name JESUS: for he shall  
22 save his people from their sins. Now all this was  
done, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken  
23 of the Lord, by the prophet, saying,\* Behold, a  
virgin shall be with child, and shall bring forth a  
son, and they shall call his name Emmanuel, which,  
24 being interpreted, is, God with us. Then Joseph,  
being raised from sleep, did as the angel of the  
Lord had bidden him, and took unto him his wife;  
25 and knew her not till she had brought forth her  
first-born son.

\* Isa. 7: 14.



## CHAPTER III.

*Birth of John — Birth of Christ — His birth announced to the shepherds — His circumcision — Simeon blesses Christ and prophecies — Anna blesses Christ.*

Lk. 1.57 Now Elizabeth's full time came, that she should  
58 be delivered; and she brought forth a son. And  
her neighbors and her cousins heard how the Lord  
had showed great mercy upon her; and they re-  
59 joiced with her. And it came to pass, that, on the  
eighth day, they came to circumcise the child; and  
they called him Zechariah, after the name of his  
60 father. And his mother answered and said, Not  
61 so; but he shall be called John. And they said  
unto her, There is none of thy kindred that is  
62 called by this name. And they made signs to his  
63 father, how he would have him called. And he  
asked for a writing-table, and wrote, saying, His  
64 name is John. And they marvelled all. And his  
mouth was opened immediately, and his tongue  
65 loosed, and he spake, and praised God. And fear  
came on all that dwelt round about them; and all  
these sayings were noised abroad throughout all the  
66 hill-country of Judea. And all they that heard  
them laid them up in their hearts, saying, What  
manner of child shall this be? And the hand of  
the Lord was with him.  
67 And his father, Zechariah, was filled with the  
68 Holy Ghost, and prophesied, saying, Blessed be the

Lord God of Israel; for he hath visited and re-  
 Lk. 1. 69 deemed his people, and hath raised up a horn of  
 salvation for us, in the house of his servant David; \*  
 70 as he spake by the mouth of his holy prophets, †  
 71 which have been since the world began: that we  
 should be saved from our enemies, and from the  
 72 hand of all that hate us; to perform the mercy  
 promised to our fathers, and to remember his holy  
 73 covenant; the oath which he sware to our father  
 74 Abraham, ‡ that he would grant unto us, that we,  
 being delivered out of the hand of our enemies,  
 75 might serve him without fear, § in holiness and  
 righteousness before him, all the days of our life.  
 76 And thou, child, shalt be called The Prophet of  
 the Highest: for thou shalt go before the face of  
 77 the Lord, to prepare his ways; to give knowledge  
 of salvation unto his people, by the remission of  
 78 their sins, through the tender mercy of our God;  
 whereby the day-spring from on high hath visited  
 79 us, to give light to them that sit in darkness and in  
 the shadow of death, to guide our feet into the way  
 80 of peace. And the child grew, and waxed strong  
 in spirit, and was in the deserts till the day of his  
 shewing unto Israel.

Mt. 2. 1 And it came to pass, in the days of Herod the  
 king, that there went out a decree from Cæsar,

Lk. 2. 1 Augustus, that all the world should be taxed.

\* 1 Sam. 2: 10. Ps. 132: 17.

† Is. 11: 1. Jer. 23: 5, 6.

‡ Gen. 22: 16 — 18.

§ Is. 54: 13, 14.

Lk. 2.2 And this taxing was first made when Cyrenius was  
3 governor of Syria. And all went to be taxed,  
4 every one into his own city. And Joseph also went  
up from Galilee, out of the city of Nazareth, into  
Judea, unto the city of David, which is called  
Bethlehem, because he was of the house and lin-  
5 eage of David, to be taxed with Mary his espoused  
6 wife, being great with child. And so it was, that,  
while they were there, the days were accomplished  
7 that she should be delivered. And she brought forth  
her first-born son, and wrapped him in swaddling-  
clothes, and laid him in a manger; because there  
was no room for them in the inn.

8 And there were in the same country shepherds  
abiding in the field, keeping watch over their flock  
9 by night. And, lo, the angel of the Lord came  
upon them, and the glory of the Lord shone round  
10 about them: and they were sore afraid. And the  
angel said unto them, Fear not: for, behold, I bring  
you good tidings of great joy, which shall be to all  
11 people. For unto you is born this day, in the city  
of David, a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord.  
12 And this shall be a sign unto you; Ye shall find  
the babe wrapped in swaddling-clothes, lying in a  
13 manger. And suddenly there was with the angel a  
multitude of the heavenly host, praising God, and  
14 saying, Glory to God in the highest, and on earth  
peace, good will toward men.

15 And it came to pass, as the angels were gone  
away from them into heaven, the shepherds said

one to another, Let us now go even unto Bethlehem, and see this thing which is come to pass,  
Lk. 2.16 which the Lord hath made known unto us. And they came with haste, and found Mary, and Joseph,  
17 and the babe lying in a manger. And, when they had seen it, they made known abroad the saying  
18 which was told them concerning this child. And all they that heard it, wondered at those things  
19 which were told them by the shepherds. But Mary kept all these things, and pondered them in her  
20 heart. And the shepherds returned, glorifying and praising God for all the things that they had heard and seen, as it was told unto them.

21 And when eight days\* were accomplished for the circumcising of the child, his name was called JESUS, which was so named of the angel before he was conceived in the womb.

22 And when the days of her purification, according to the law of Moses, were accomplished, they brought him to Jerusalem, to present him to the Lord,  
23 as it is written in the law of the Lord, Every male that openeth the womb shall be called holy to the  
24 Lord ; † and to offer a sacrifice, according to that which is said in the law of the Lord, A pair of turtle-doves, or two young pigeons. ‡

25 And, behold, there was a man in Jerusalem, whose name was Simeon; and the same man was just and devout, waiting for the consolation of  
26 Israel: and the Holy Ghost was upon him. And

\* Lev. 12 : 3.

† Ex. 13 : 2 ; 34 : 19.

‡ Lev. 12 : 8.

it was revealed unto him by the Holy Ghost, that he should not see death, before he had seen the  
Lk. 2.27 Lord's Christ. And he came by the Spirit into the temple: and when the parents brought in the child Jesus, to do for him after the custom of the law,  
28 then took he him up in his arms, and blessed God,  
29 and said, Lord, now lettest thou thy servant depart in peace, according to thy word; for mine eyes  
30 have seen thy salvation, which thou hast prepared  
31 before the face of all people; a light to lighten the Gentiles,\* and the glory of thy people Israel.  
32 And Joseph and his mother marvelled at those  
33 things which were spoken of him. And Simeon  
34 blessed them, and said unto Mary his mother, Behold, this child is set for the fall and rising again of many in Israel; and for a sign which shall be  
35 spoken against, yea, a sword shall pierce through thy own soul also; that the thoughts of many hearts may be revealed.

36 And there was one Anna, a prophetess, the daughter of Phanuel, of the tribe of Asher; she was of a great age, and had lived with her husband seven  
37 years from her virginity; and she was a widow of about fourscore and four years, which departed not from the temple, but served God with fastings and  
38 prayers night and day. And she, coming in that instant, gave thanks likewise unto the Lord, and spake of him to all them that looked for redemption in Jerusalem.

\* Is. 42 : 6 ; 49 : 6 ; 60 : 3.

## CHAPTER IV.

*Wise men from the East visit Christ — The children slain by Herod — Christ with the doctors in the temple.*

Lk. 2. 39. AND when they had performed all things, according to the law of the Lord, *and had returned to*  
Mt. 2. 1 *Bethlehem*, behold, there came wise men from the  
2 east to Jerusalem, saying, Where is he that is born  
King of the Jews? for we have seen his star in the  
3 east, and are come to worship him. When Herod  
the king had heard these things, he was troubled,  
4 and all Jerusalem with him. And when he had  
gathered all the chief priests and scribes of the  
people together, he demanded of them where Christ  
5 should be born. And they said unto him, In Bethlehem of Judea: for thus it is written by the  
6 prophet,\* And thou, Bethlehem, in the land of Judah,  
art not the least among the princes of Judah: for  
out of thee shall come a governor, that shall rule  
7 my people Israel. Then Herod, when he had privily  
called the wise men, inquired of them diligently  
8 what time the star appeared. And he sent them to  
Bethlehem, and said, Go, and search diligently for  
the young child; and, when ye have found him,  
bring me word again, that I may come and worship  
9 him also. When they had heard the king, they  
departed; and lo, the star, which they saw in the  
east, went before them, till it came and stood over

\* Mi. 5 : 2.



Mt. 2:10 where the young child was. When they saw the star, they rejoiced with exceeding great joy.

11 And when they were come into the house, they saw the young child with Mary his mother, and fell down, and worshipped him; and, when they had opened their treasures, they presented unto him  
12 gifts, gold, and frankincense, and myrrh. And being warned of God in a dream, that they should not return to Herod, they departed into their own country another way.

13 And when they were departed, behold the angel of the Lord appeareth to Joseph in a dream, saying, Arise, and take the young child and his mother, and flee into Egypt, and be thou there until I bring thee word: for Herod will seek the young child to  
14 destroy him. When he arose, he took the young child and his mother by night, and departed into  
15 Egypt, and was there until the death of Herod: that it might be fulfilled which was spoken of the Lord by the prophet, saying, Out of Egypt have I called my son.\*

16 Then Herod, when he saw that he was mocked of the wise men, was exceeding wroth, and sent forth, and slew all the children that were in Bethlehem, and in all the coasts thereof, from two years old and under, according to the time which he had  
17 diligently inquired of the wise men. Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by Jeremiah the  
18 prophet, saying, In Ramah was there a voice heard,

\* Hos. 11 : 1.

lamentation, and weeping, and great mourning, Rachel weeping for her children, and would not be comforted, because they are not.\*

Mt. 2.19 But when Herod was dead, behold, an angel of the Lord appeareth in a dream to Joseph in Egypt, 20 saying, Arise, and take the young child and his mother, and go into the land of Israel; for they are 21 dead which sought the young child's life. And he arose, and took the young child and his mother, and 22 came into the land of Israel. But when he heard that Archelaus did reign in Judea in the room of his father Herod, he was afraid to go thither: notwithstanding, being warned of God in a dream, he 23 turned aside into the parts of Galilee: and he came and dwelt in a city called Nazareth: that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophets, He Lk. 2.40 shall be called a Nazarene.† And the child grew, and waxed strong in spirit, filled with wisdom; and the grace of God was upon him.

41 Now his parents went to Jerusalem every year at 42 the feast of the passover. And when he was twelve years old, they went up to Jerusalem, after the 43 custom of the feast. And when they had fulfilled the days, as they returned, the child Jesus tarried behind in Jerusalem; and Joseph and his mother 44 knew not of it. But they, supposing him to have been in the company, went a day's journey; and they sought him among their kinsfolk and acquaint- 45 ance. And when they found him not, they turned

\* Jer. 31 : 15.

† Jud. 13 : 5 ; Is. 53 : 2, 3 ; Amos 2 : 11, 12.



Lk. 2.46 back again to Jerusalem, seeking him. And it came to pass, that after three days they found him in the temple, sitting in the midst of the doctors, both hearing them, and asking them questions.  
 47 And all that heard him were astonished at his  
 48 understanding and answers. And when they saw him, they were amazed: and his mother said unto him, Son, why hast thou thus dealt with us? behold, thy father and I have sought thee sorrowing.  
 49 And he said unto them, How is it that ye sought me? Wist ye not that I must be about my Father's  
 50 business? And they understood not the saying which he spake unto them.  
 51 And he went down with them, and came to Nazareth, and was subject unto them: but his mother  
 52 kept all these sayings in her heart. And Jesus increased in wisdom and stature, and in favor with God and man.

---

## CHAPTER V.

*The preaching of John the Baptist — Christ baptized.*

Lk. 3.1 Now in the fifteenth year of the reign of Tiberius Cæsar, Pontius Pilate being governor of Judea, and Herod being tetrarch of Galilee, and his brother Philip tetrarch of Iturea and of the region of Trachonitis, and Lysanias the tetrarch of  
 2 Abilene, Annas and Caiaphas being the high priests,  
 Mt. 9.1 the word of God came unto John the Baptist, the  
 3 son of Zechariah in the wilderness of Judea. And

he came into all the country about Jordan, preaching the baptism of repentance for the remission of  
 Mt. 3. 2 sins : and saying, Repent ye : for the kingdom of  
 3 heaven is at hand. For this is he that was spoken  
 Mk. 1. 2 of by the prophets,\* Behold, I send my messenger  
 before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before  
 Lk. 3. 4 thee. The voice of one crying in the wilderness,  
 Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths  
 5 straight. Every valley shall be filled, and every  
 mountain and hill shall be brought low ; and the  
 crooked shall be made straight, and the rough ways  
 6 shall be made smooth ; and all flesh shall see the  
 Mt. 3. 4 salvation of God. And the same John had his  
 & raiment of camel's hair, and a leathern girdle about  
 his loins ; and his meat was locusts and wild honey.  
 Mk. 1. 5 Then went out to him they of Jerusalem, and all  
 Judea, and all the region round about Jordan,  
 Mt. 3. 6 and were baptized of him in the river Jordan, con-  
 7 fessing their sins. But when he saw many of the  
 Pharisees and Sadducees come to his baptism, he  
 said unto them, O generation of vipers ! who hath  
 8 warned you to flee from the wrath to come ? Bring  
 9 forth, therefore, fruits meet for repentance ; and  
 think not to say, within yourselves, We have Abra-  
 ham to our father : for I say unto you, That God is  
 able of these stones to raise up children unto Abra-  
 10 ham. And now also the axe is laid unto the root  
 Lk. 3. 9 of the trees ; every tree, therefore, which bringeth  
 not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the

\* Mal. 3 : 1.

† Is. 40 : 34

Lk. 3.10 fire. And the people asked him, saying, What  
11 shall we do, then? He answereth and saith unto  
them, he that hath two coats, let him impart to him  
that hath none; and he that hath meat, let him do  
12 likewise. Then came, also, publicans to be bap-  
tized, and said unto him, Master, what shall we do?  
13 And he said unto them, Exact no more than that  
14 which is appointed you. And the soldiers, like-  
wise, demanded of him, saying, And what shall we  
do? And he said unto them, Do violence to no  
man, neither accuse any falsely; and be content  
with your wages.

15 And as the people were in expectation, and all  
men mused in their hearts of John, whether he  
16 were the Christ or not; John answered, saying  
Mt. 3.11 unto them all, I indeed baptize you with water unto  
Mk. 1.7 repentance; but there cometh one mightier than I  
after me, the latchet of whose shoes I am not wor-  
Lk. 3.16 thy to stoop down and unloose. He shall baptize  
17 you with the Holy Ghost and with fire: whose fan  
is in his hand, and he will thoroughly purge his  
floor, and will gather the wheat into his garner;  
but the chaff he will burn with unquenchable fire.  
18 And many other things, in his exhortation, preached  
he unto the people.

21 Now, when all the people were baptized, it came to  
Mk. 1.9 pass in those days, that Jesus came from Nazareth  
Mt. 3.13 of Galilee, to Jordan, unto John, to be baptized of  
14 him. But John forbade him, saying, I have need  
to be baptized of thee, and comest thou to me?

Mt. 3.15 And Jesus answering, said unto him, Suffer it to be  
 so now; for thus it becometh us to fulfil all right-  
 16 eousness. Then he suffered him. And Jesus, when  
 he was baptized, went up straightway out of the  
 Lk. 3.21 water: and, praying, lo, the heavens were opened  
 22 unto him, and he saw the Spirit of God in a bodily  
 shape like a dove descending and lighting upon him.  
 Mt. 3.17 And, lo, a voice came from heaven, saying, This is  
 my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.

---

## CHAPTER VI.

*Christ tempted in the wilderness — John the Evangelist's  
 testimony of Christ.*

Lk. 3.23 AND Jesus himself began to be about thirty years  
 Mt. 4. of age. And being full of the Holy Ghost, he re-  
 1—11 & turned from Jordan, and was led by the Spirit into  
 Mk. 1.13 the wilderness, to be tempted of the devil. And he  
 &  
 Lk. 4. was there in the wilderness forty days and forty  
 1—13 nights, and was with the wild beasts. And in those  
 days he did eat nothing, and when they were ended,  
 he afterward hungered. And the devil came unto  
 him, and said, If thou be the Son of God, com-  
 mand that these stones be made bread. Jesus  
 answered him, saying, It is written, man shall not  
 live by bread alone, but by every word that pro-  
 ceedeth out of the mouth of God.\* Then the devil

taketh him up to Jerusalem, the holy city, and setteth him on a pinnacle of the temple, and saith unto him, If thou be the Son of God, cast thyself down from hence: for it is written, He shall give his angels charge over thee, to keep thee; and in their hands they shall bear thee up, lest at any time thou dash thy foot against a stone.\* Jesus said unto him, It is written again, Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God.† Again, the devil taketh him up into an exceeding high mountain, and sheweth him all the kingdoms of the world, and the glory of them, in a moment of time. And he said unto him, All this power will I give thee, and the glory of them: for that is delivered unto me; and to whomsoever I will I give it. If, therefore, thou wilt fall down and worship me, all shall be thine. Jesus saith unto him, Get thee hence, Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve.‡ Then the devil departed from him for a season; and, behold, angels came and ministered unto him.

Jn. 1. 1. In the beginning was the Word, and the Word  
2 was with God, and the Word was God. The same  
3 was in the beginning with God. All things were  
made by him; and without him was not any thing  
4 made that was made. In him was life; and the  
5 life was the light of men. And the light shineth  
in darkness; and the darkness comprehended it not.

\* Ps. 91: 11, 12.

† Deut. 6: 16.

‡ Deut. 10: 20.

Jn. 1. 6 There was a man sent from God, whose name  
7 was John. The same came for a witness, to bear  
witness of the Light, that all men through him  
8 might believe. He was not that Light, but was  
9 sent to bear witness of that Light. That was the  
true Light, which lighteth every man that cometh  
10 into the world. He was in the world, and the  
world was made by him, and the world knew him  
11 not. He came unto his own, and his own received  
12 him not. But as many as received him, to them  
gave he power to become the sons of God, even to  
13 them that believe on his name: which were born,  
not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the  
will of man, but of God.

14 And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among  
us and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the  
only begotten of the Father, full of grace and  
15 truth. John bare witness of him, and cried, say-  
ing, This was he of whom I spake, He that cometh  
after me is preferred before me: for he was before  
16 me. And of his fulness have all we received,  
17 and grace for grace. For the law was given by  
Moses, but grace and truth came by Jesus Christ.  
18 No man hath seen God at any time; the only be-  
gotten Son, which is in the bosom of the Father, he  
hath declared him.\*

\* These eighteen verses are a declaration of John concerning Christ; and have no particular place, as to time, in Christ's history, but are appropriate at any time.



## CHAPTER VII.

*John's testimony of Christ, continued.*

Jn. 1.19 AND this is the record of John, when the Jews sent priests and Levites from Jerusalem, to ask  
20 him, Who art thou? And he confessed, and denied  
21 not; but confessed, I am not the Christ. And they asked him, What then? Art thou Elijah?  
And he saith, I am not. Art thou that prophet?  
22 And he answered, No. Then said they unto him, Who art thou? that we may give an answer to them that sent us. What sayest thou of thyself?  
23 He said, I am the voice of one crying in the wilderness, Make straight the way of the Lord, as said  
24 the prophet Isaiah.\* And they which were sent  
25 were of the Pharisees. And they asked him, and said unto him, Why baptizest thou, then, if thou be not that Christ, nor Elijah, neither that prophet?  
26 John answered them, saying, I baptize with water; but there standeth one among you, whom ye know  
27 not; he it is, who, coming after me, is preferred before me, whose shoe's latchet I am not worthy to  
28 unloose. These things were done in Bethabara, beyond Jordan, where John was baptizing.  
29 The next day John seeth Jesus coming unto him, and saith, Behold the Lamb of God, which taketh  
30 away the sin of the world! This is he of whom I said, After me cometh a man which is preferred

\* Is. 40. 3.



Jn. 1. 31 before me; for he was before me. And I knew him not: but that he should be made manifest to Israel, therefore am I come baptizing with water.  
32 And John bare record, saying, I saw the Spirit descending from heaven like a dove, and it abode upon him. And I knew him not: but he that sent me to baptize with water, the same said unto me, Upon whom thou shalt see the Spirit descending, and remaining on him, the same is he which baptizeth with the Holy Ghost. And I saw, and bare record that this is the Son of God.

35 Again, the next day after, John stood, and two of his disciples; and looking upon Jesus as he walked, he saith, Behold the Lamb of God! And the two disciples heard him speak, and they followed Jesus. Then Jesus turned, and saw them following, and saith unto them, What seek ye? They said unto him, Rabbi, which is to say, being interpreted, Master, where dwellest thou? He saith unto them, Come and see. They came and saw where he dwelt, and abode with him that day, for it was about the tenth hour. One of the two which heard John speak, and followed him, was Andrew, Simon Peter's brother. He first findeth his own brother Simon, and saith unto him, We have found the Messiah, which is, being interpreted, the Christ. And he brought him to Jesus. And when Jesus beheld him, he said, Thou art Simon the son of Jonah: thou shalt be called Cephas, which is, by interpretation, A stone. The day fol-

Jn. 1.43 lowing, Jesus would go forth into Galilee, and find-  
44 eth Philip, and saith unto him, Follow me. Now  
Philip was of Bethsaida, the city of Andrew and  
45 Peter. Philip findeth Nathanael, and saith unto  
him, We have found him of whom Moses in the law  
and the prophets did write, Jesus of Nazareth, the  
46 son of Joseph. And Nathanael said unto him,  
Can there any good thing come out of Nazareth?  
47 Philip saith unto him, Come and see. Jesus saw  
Nathanael coming to him, and saith of him, Behold  
48 an Israelite indeed, in whom is no guile ! Nathan-  
ael saith unto him, Whence knowest thou me ?  
Jesus answered and said unto him, Before that  
Philip called thee, when thou wast under the fig-  
49 tree, I saw thee. Nathanael answered and saith  
unto him, Rabbi, thou art the Son of God ; thou  
50 art the King of Israel. Jesus answered and said  
unto him, Because I said unto thee I saw thee  
under the fig-tree, believest thou ? thou shalt see  
51 greater things than these. And he saith unto him,  
Verily, verily, I say unto you, Hereafter ye shall  
see heaven open, and the angels of God ascending  
and descending upon the Son of man.\*

\* Gen. 28 : 12.

## CHAPTER VIII.

*Jesus attends a marriage, and turns water into wine —  
Goes up to the first passover after his baptism.*

Jn. 2. 1 AND the third day there was a marriage in Cana of Galilee; and the mother of Jesus was there;  
2 and both Jesus was called and his disciples to the  
3 marriage. And when they wanted wine, the mother  
4 of Jesus saith unto him, They have no wine. Jesus  
saith unto her, Woman, what have I to do with  
5 thee? mine hour is not yet come. His mother saith  
unto the servants, Whatsoever he saith unto you,  
6 do it. And there were set six water-pots of stone,  
after the manner of the purifying of the Jews, con-  
7 taining two or three firkins apiece. Jesus saith  
unto them, Fill the water-pots with water. And  
8 they filled them up to the brim. And he saith unto  
them, Draw out now, and bear unto the governor  
9 of the feast. And they bare it. When the ruler  
of the feast had tasted the water that was made  
wine, and knew not whence it was (but the servants  
which drew the water knew), the governor of the  
10 feast called the bridegroom, and said unto him,  
Every man at the beginning doth set forth good  
wine, and when men have well drunk, then that  
which is worse; but thou hast kept the good wine  
11 until now. This beginning of miracles did Jesus  
in Cana of Galilee, and manifested forth his glory;  
and his disciples believed on him.

Jn.2.12 After this, he went down to Capernaum, he and his mother, and his brethren, and his disciples; and they continued there not many days.

13 And the Jews' passover was at hand; and Jesus  
14 went up to Jerusalem, and found in the temple those that sold oxen, and sheep, and doves, and the  
15 changers of money, sitting. And, when he had made a scourge of small cords, he drove them all out of the temple, and the sheep, and the oxen; and poured out the changers' money, and overthrew  
16 the tables; and said unto them that sold doves, Take these things hence; make not my Father's  
17 house an house of merchandise. And his disciples remembered that it was written, The zeal of thine house hath eaten me up.\*

18 Then answered the Jews, and said unto him, What sign showest thou unto us, seeing that thou  
19 doest these things? Jesus answered and said unto them, Destroy this temple, and in three days I will  
20 raise it up. Then said the Jews, Forty and six years was this temple in building, and wilt thou rear it  
21 up in three days? But he spake of the temple of  
22 his body. When, therefore, he was risen from the dead, his disciples remembered that he had said this unto them; and they believed the scripture, and the word which Jesus had said.

\* Ps. 69 : 9.

## CHAPTER IX.

*Christ converses with and instructs Nicodemus — Travels in Judea.*

Jn. 2. 23 Now, when he was in Jerusalem at the passover, in the feast day, many believed in his name, when  
24 they saw the miracles which he did. But Jesus did not commit himself unto them, because he knew  
25 all men; and needed not that any should testify of man, for he knew what was in man.

Jn. 3. 1 There was a man of the Pharisees, named Nicodemus, a ruler of the Jews; the same came to Jesus by night, and said unto him, Rabbi, we know that thou art a teacher come from God; for no man can do these miracles that thou doest, except God  
3 be with him. Jesus answered and said unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God.  
4 Nicodemus saith unto him, How can a man be born when he is old? Can he enter the second  
5 time into his mother's womb, and be born? Jesus answered, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot  
6 enter into the kingdom of God. That which is born of the flesh is flesh, and that which is born of  
7 the Spirit is spirit. Marvel not that I said unto thee, Ye must be born again. The wind bloweth where it listeth, and thou hearest the sound thereof, but canst not tell whence it cometh, and whither it

goeth ; so is every one that is born of the Spirit.

Jn. 3. 9 Nicodemus answered and said unto him, How can  
10 these things be ? Jesus answered and said unto  
him, Art thou a master of Israel, and knowest not  
11 these things ? Verily, verily I say unto thee, We  
speak that we do know, and testify that we have  
12 seen, and ye receive not our witness. If I have  
told you earthly things, and ye believe not, how  
shall ye believe if I tell you of heavenly things ?  
13 And no man hath ascended up to heaven but he that  
came down from heaven, even the Son of man,  
which is in heaven.

14 And as Moses lifted up the serpent \* in the wil-  
derness, even so must the Son of man be lifted up,  
15 that whosoever believeth in him should not perish,  
but have eternal life.

16 For God so loved the world, that he gave his  
only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him  
17 should not perish, but have everlasting life. For  
God sent not his Son into the world to condemn  
the world, but that the world through him might  
be saved.

18 He that believeth on him is not condemned ; but  
he that believeth not is condemned already ; because  
he hath not believed in the name of the only begot-  
19 ten Son of God. And this is the condemnation,  
that light is come into the world, and men loved  
darkness rather than light, because their deeds were  
20 evil. For every one that doeth evil hateth the

\* Num. 21 : 9.



light, neither cometh to the light, lest his deeds  
Jn. 3.21 should be reprov'd. But he that doeth truth  
cometh to the light, that his deeds may be made  
manifest that they are wrought in God.

22 After these things came Jesus and his disciples  
into the land of Judea, and there he tarried with  
them and baptized.

23 And John also was baptizing in Enon, near to  
Salim, because there was much water there; and  
24 they came, and were baptized; for John was not  
yet cast into prison.

---

## CHAPTER X.

*John the Baptist bears testimony of Christ — Reproves  
Herod, and is cast into prison.*

Jn. 3.25 THEN there arose a question between some of  
John's disciples and the Jews about purifying.  
26 And they came unto John, and said unto him, Rabbi,  
he that was with thee beyond Jordan, to whom thou  
barest witness, behold, the same baptizeth, and all  
27 men come to him. John answered and said, A man  
can receive nothing, except it be given him from  
28 heaven. Ye yourselves bear me witness that I  
said, I am not the Christ, but that I am sent before  
29 him. He that hath the bride is the bridegroom;  
but the friend of the bridegroom, which standeth  
and heareth him, rejoiceth greatly because of the  
bridegroom's voice. This my joy therefore is ful-



Jn. 3.30 filled. He must increase, but I must decrease.

31 He that cometh from above is above all; he that is  
of the earth is earthly, and speaketh of the earth;  
32 he that cometh from heaven is above all. And  
what he hath seen and heard, that he testifieth; and  
33 no man receiveth his testimony. He that hath  
received his testimony hath set to his seal that  
34 God is true. For he whom God hath sent speaketh  
the words of God; for God giveth not the Spirit  
35 by measure unto him. The Father loveth the Son,  
36 and hath given all things into his hand. He that  
believeth on the Son hath everlasting life; and he  
that believeth not the Son shall not see life; but  
the wrath of God abideth on him.

Lk. 3.19 But Herod the tetrarch, being reproved by John  
& for Herodias, his brother Philip's wife (for he had  
Mk. 6.17 married her), and for all the evils which Herod had  
Lk. 3.20 done, added yet this above all, that he shut him up  
Mk. 6.18 in prison. For John had said unto Herod, It is  
not lawful for thee to have thy brother's wife.

19 Therefore Herodias had a quarrel against him, and  
20 would have killed him; but she could not. For  
Herod feared John, knowing that he was a just  
man, and a holy, and observed him; and when he  
heard him, he did many things, and heard him  
gladly.

## CHAPTER XI.

*Christ leaves Judea to return to Galilee — Stops on the way, and converses with the Samaritan woman at Jacob's well.*

Jn. 4. 1 WHEN, therefore, the Lord knew how the Phari-  
sees had heard that Jesus made and baptized more  
2 disciples than John (though Jesus himself baptized  
Mt.4.12 not, but his disciples), and had heard that John was  
3 cast into prison, he left Judea, and returned in the  
Lk.4.14 power of the Spirit into Galilee; and he must  
Jn. 4. 5 needs go through Samaria. Then cometh he to a  
city of Samaria, which is called Sychar, near to the  
parcel of ground that Jacob gave to his son Joseph.\*  
6 Now Jacob's well was there. Jesus, therefore,  
being wearied with his journey, sat thus on the  
7 well; and it was about the sixth hour. There  
cometh a woman of Samaria to draw water; Jesus  
8 saith unto her, Give me to drink (for his disciples  
9 were gone away unto the city to buy meat). Then  
saith the woman of Samaria unto him, How is it  
that thou, being a Jew, askest drink of me, which  
am a woman of Samaria? For the Jews have no  
10 dealings with the Samaritans. Jesus answered  
and said unto her, If thou knewest the gift of  
God, and who it is that saith to thee, Give me to  
drink, thou wouldst have asked of him, and he  
11 would have given thee living water. The woman  
saith unto him, Sir, thou hast nothing to draw with,

\* Gen. 33 : 19, Josh. 24 : 32.

and the well is deep ; from whence, then, hast thou  
Jn. 4.12 that living water ? Art thou greater than our  
father Jacob, which gave us the well, and drank  
thereof himself, and his children, and his cattle ?  
13 Jesus answered and said unto her, Whosoever drink-  
14 eth of this water shall thirst again ; but whosoever  
drinketh of the water that I shall give him shall  
never thirst ; but the water that I shall give him  
shall be in him a well of water springing up into  
15 everlasting life. The woman saith unto him, Sir,  
give me this water, that I thirst not, neither  
16 come hither to draw. Jesus saith unto her, Go,  
17 call thy husband, and come hither. The woman  
answered and said, I have no husband. Jesus said  
unto her, Thou hast well said, I have no husband ;  
18 for thou hast had five husbands, and he whom thou  
now hast is not thy husband ; in that saidst thou  
19 truly. The woman said unto him, Sir, I perceive  
20 that thou art a prophet. Our fathers worshipped  
in this mountain ; and ye say, That in Jerusalem is  
21 the place where men ought to worship. Jesus saith  
unto her, Woman, believe me, the hour cometh, when  
ye shall neither in this mountain, nor yet at Je-  
22 rusalem, worship the Father. Ye worship ye know  
not what ; we know what we worship ; for salvation  
23 is of the Jews. But the hour cometh, and now is,  
when the true worshippers shall worship the Father  
in spirit and in truth ; for the Father seeketh such  
24 to worship him. God is a spirit ; and they that  
worship him, must worship him in spirit and in

Jn. 4.25 truth. The woman said unto him, I know that  
Messiah cometh, which is called Christ; when he is  
26 come, he will tell us all things. Jesus saith unto  
her, I that speak unto thee am he.

27 And upon this came his disciples, and marvelled  
that he talked with the woman; yet no man said,  
What seekest thou? or, Why talkest thou with her?  
28 The woman then left her water-pot, and went her  
29 way into the city, and saith to the men, Come see  
a man which told me all things that ever I did; is  
30 not this the Christ? Then they went out of the  
city, and came unto him.

31 In the mean while his disciples prayed him, say-  
32 ing, Master, eat. But he said unto them, I have  
33 meat to eat that ye know not of. Therefore said  
the disciples one to another, Hath any man brought  
34 him aught to eat? Jesus saith unto them, My meat  
is to do the will of him that sent me, and to finish  
35 his work. Say not ye, There are yet four months,  
and then cometh harvest? behold, I say unto you,  
Lift up your eyes, and look on the fields; for they  
36 are white already to harvest. And he that reapeth  
receiveth wages, and gathereth fruit unto life eter-  
nal; that both he that soweth and he that reapeth  
37 may rejoice together. And herein is that saying  
38 true, One soweth, and another reapeth. I sent you  
to reap that whereon ye bestowed no labor; other  
men labored, and ye are entered into their labors.

39 And many of the Samaritans of that city believed  
on him for the saying of the woman, which testified,

Jn. 4.40 He told me all that ever I did. So when the Samaritans were come unto him, they besought him that he would tarry with them; and he abode there  
 41 two days. And many more believed because of his  
 42 own word, and said unto the woman, Now we believe, not because of thy saying; for we have heard him ourselves, and know that this is indeed the Christ, the Saviour of the world.

---

## CHAPTER XII.

*Christ arrives in Galilee — Preaches in the synagogue with great success — Heals a nobleman's son — Comes to Nazareth — Preaches in the synagogue — Is rejected by the Jews.*

Jn. 4.43 Now, after two days, he departed thence, and  
 44 went into Galilee; for Jesus himself testified that  
 45 a prophet hath no honor in his own country. Then, when he was come into Galilee, the Galileans received him, having seen all the things that he did at Jerusalem at the feast; for they also went unto the feast.

Mt. 4.17 From that time Jesus began to preach the gospel  
 Mk. 1.15 of the kingdom of God, and saying, The time is fulfilled, and the kingdom of God is at hand; repent  
 Lk. 4.14 ye, and believe the gospel; and there went out a fame of him through all the region round about.  
 15 And he taught in their synagogues, being glorified of all.



**Jn. 4.46** So Jesus came again into Cana of Galilee, where he made the water wine. And there was a certain  
47 nobleman whose son was sick at Capernaum. When he heard that Jesus was come out of Judea into Galilee, he went unto him, and besought him that he would come down and heal his son; for he was  
48 at the point of death. Then said Jesus unto him, Except ye see signs and wonders, ye will not believe.  
49 The nobleman saith unto him, Sir, come down ere my child die. Jesus saith unto him, Go thy way; thy son liveth. And the man believed the word that Jesus had spoken unto him, and he went his  
51 way. And, as he was now going down, his servants met him, and told him, saying, Thy son liveth.  
52 Then inquired he of them the hour when he began to amend. And they said unto him, Yesterday, at  
53 the seventh hour, the fever left him. So the father knew that it was at the same hour in the which Jesus said unto him, Thy son liveth: and himself  
54 believed and his whole house. This is again the second miracle that Jesus did when he was come out of Judea into Galilee.

**Lk. 4.16** And he came to Nazareth, where he had been brought up: and, as his custom was, he went into the synagogue on the Sabbath day, and stood up for  
17 to read. And there was delivered unto him the book of the prophet Isaiah. And when he had opened the book, he found the place where it was  
18 written,\* The Spirit of the Lord is upon me, because

\* Isa. 61 : 1.

he hath anointed me to preach the gospel to the poor; he hath sent me to heal the broken-hearted, to preach deliverance to the captives, and recovering of sight to the blind; to set at liberty them that  
Lk. 4.19 are bruised, to preach the acceptable year of the  
20 Lord. And he closed the book, and he gave it again to the minister, and sat down. And the eyes of all them that were in the synagogue were fastened on him. And he began to say unto them,  
21 This day is this scripture fulfilled in your ears.  
22 And all bare him witness, and wondered at the gracious words which proceeded out of his mouth.  
23 And they said, Is not this Joseph's son? And he said unto them, Ye will surely say unto me this proverb, Physician, heal thyself; whatsoever we have heard done in Capernaum, do also here in thy  
24 country. And he said, Verily I say unto you, No  
25 prophet is accepted in his own country. But I tell you of a truth, many widows were in Israel in the days of Elijah, when the heaven was shut up three years and six months, when great famine was  
26 throughout all the land; but unto none of them was Elijah sent, save unto Zarephath, a city of Sidon,  
27 unto a woman that was a widow.\* And many lepers were in Israel in the time of Elisha the prophet, and none of them was cleansed, saving Naaman the  
28 Syrian.† And all they in the synagogue, when  
29 they heard these things, were filled with wrath, and rose up, and thrust him out of the city, and led him

\* 1 Ki. 17 : 9—16.

† 2 Ki. 5 : 8—14.



unto the brow of the hill whereon their city was built, that they might cast him down headlong.  
 Lu.4.30 But he, passing through the midst of them, went his way.

## CHAPTER XIII.

*He leaves Nazareth and goes down again to Capernaum—Preaches out of a boat at the sea-side—The great draught of fishes—Calls Peter, Andrew, James, and John—Heals a demoniac—Heals Simon Peter's wife's mother.*

Mt.4.13 AND, leaving Nazareth, he came and dwelt in Capernaum, which is upon the sea-coast, in the borders of Zebulon and Naphtali; that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Isaiah the prophet, 14 saying,\* The land of Zebulon and the land of Naphtali, by the way of the sea, beyond Jordan, 15 Galilee of the Gentiles; the people which sat in darkness saw great light; and to them which sat in the region and shadow of death, light is sprung up.  
 Lk. 5. 1 And it came to pass that, as the people pressed upon him to hear the word of God, he stood by the Mt.4.18 lake of Gennesaret, which is the sea of Galilee, Lk. 5.2 and saw two ships standing by the lake, but the & fishermen were gone out of them. And he saw two Mt.4.18 brethren, Simon, called Peter, and Andrew his brother, who *had been* casting their nets into the sea (for they were fishers), and they were washing

\* Is. 9 : 1, 2.

Lk. 5. 3 their nets. And he entered into one of the ships, which was Simon's, and prayed him that he would thrust out a little from the land. And he sat down, and taught the people out of the ship.

4 Now, when he had left speaking, he said unto Simon, Launch out into the deep, and let down your  
5 nets for a draught. And Simon answering, said unto him, Master, we have toiled all the night, and have taken nothing : nevertheless, at thy word I  
6 will let down the net. And when they had this done, they enclosed a great multitude of fishes : and  
7 their net brake. And they beckoned unto their partners, which were in the other ship, that they should come and help them. And they came, and filled both the ships, so that they began to sink.

8 When Simon Peter saw it, he fell down at Jesus' knees, saying, Depart from me, for I am a sinful  
9 man, O Lord. For he was astonished, and all that were with him, at the draught of the fishes which  
10 they had taken : and so was also James and John, the sons of Zebedee, which were partners with Si-

Mt. 4. 19 mon. And Jesus said unto them, Fear not. Fol-

Mk. 1. 17 low me, and I will make you to become fishers of  
18 men. And straightway they forsook their nets,

Mt. 4. 21 and followed him. And *when* he saw other two brethren, James the son of Zebedee, and John his brother, in a ship with Zebedee their father, mend-

Mk. 1. 20 ing their nets, straightway he called them : and immediately they left their father Zebedee in the ship with the hired servants, and went after him.

Mk.1.21 And they went into Capernaum; and straightway  
on the Sabbath-day, he entered into the synagogue,  
Lk. 4.32 and taught. And his word was with power.  
Mk.1.22 And they were astonished at his doctrine; for he  
taught them as one that had authority, and not as  
Lk. 4.33 the scribes. And in the synagogue there was a  
man which had a spirit of an unclean devil, and he  
34 cried out with a loud voice, saying, Let us alone;  
what have we to do with thee, thou Jesus of Naz-  
areth? Art thou come to destroy us? I know thee  
35 who thou art; the Holy One of God. And Jesus  
rebuked him, saying, Hold thy peace, and come out  
of him. And when the devil had thrown him in  
the midst, and torn him,\* he came out of him, and  
36 hurt him not. And they were all amazed, and  
spake among themselves, saying, What a word  
Mk.1.27 is this! what new doctrine is this? For with  
Lk. 4.36 authority and power, he commandeth the unclean  
Mk.1.28 spirits, and they do obey him. And the fame of  
Lk. 4.37 him went out into every place of the country round  
about.

Mk.1.29 And when they were come out of the synagogue,  
they entered into the house of Simon and Andrew,  
Lk. 4.38 with James and John. And Simon's wife's mother  
was taken with a great fever; and they besought  
39 him for her. And he stood over her, and rebuked  
Mk.1.31 the fever; and took her by the hand, and lifted her  
up; and immediately the fever left her, and she  
Lk. 4.39 arose, and ministered unto them.

\* Probably his clothes.

- Mk.1.32 And at even, when the sun did set, they brought unto him all that were diseased, and them that were  
 33 possessed with devils. And all the city was gathered together at the door, and he cast out many  
 Lk. 4.41 devils; *who cried* out, saying, Thou art Christ, the Son of God. And he, rebuking them, suffered them not to speak: for they knew that he was  
 40 Christ; and he laid his hands on all that were  
 Mt. 8.16 sick, and healed them; that it might be fulfilled  
 17 which was spoken by Isaiah\* the prophet, saying, Himself took our infirmities, and bare our sicknesses.
- Mk.1.35 And in the morning, rising up a great while before day, he went out, and departed into a solitary  
 36 place, and there prayed. And Simon, and they  
 37 that were with him, followed after him. And when  
 Lk. 4.42 they had found him, they stayed him, that he should not depart from them, and said unto him,  
 Mk.1.38 All men seek for thee. And he said unto them,  
 Lk. 4.43 Let us go into the next towns, for I must preach the kingdom of God to other cities also; for therefore am I sent.

---

## CHAPTER XIV.

*Christ heals a leper — Heals a palsied man.*

- Mt. 4.23 AND Jesus went about all Galilee, teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the gospel of the kingdom, and healing all manner of sickness, and

\* Is. 53 : 4, 5.

Mt.4.24 all manner of disease, among the people. And his fame went throughout all Syria ; and they brought unto him all sick people that were taken with divers diseases and torments, and those which were possessed with devils, and those which were lunatic, and those that had the palsy, and he healed them.

25 And there followed him great multitudes of people from Galilee, and from Decapolis, and from Jerusalem, and from Judea, and from beyond Jordan.

Lk.5.12 And it came to pass, when he was in a certain

Mk.1.40 city, behold, there came a leper to him, beseeching him, and kneeling down to him, and saying unto him, Lord, if thou wilt, thou canst make me clean.

41 And Jesus, moved with compassion, put forth his hand, and touched him, and saith unto him, I will :

42 be thou clean. And immediately the leprosy de-

43 parted from him, and he was cleansed. And Jesus

Mt. 8. 4 sent him away and straitly charged him, See thou

Mk.1.44 tell no man, but go thy way, show thyself to the priest, and offer for thy cleansing those things which Moses commanded, for a testimony unto

45 them.\* But he went out, and began to publish it

Lk. 5.15 much, and to blaze abroad the matter ; and great multitudes came together to hear, and to be healed

Mk.1.45 by him of their infirmities, insomuch that Jesus

Lk. 5.16 could no more openly enter into the city. And he withdrew himself into the wilderness, and prayed.

Mk. 2. 1 And again he entered into Capernaum, after some days ; and it was noised that he was in the

\* Lev. 14 : 2—20.



Mk. 2.2 house. And straightway many were gathered together, insomuch that there was no room to receive  
Lk. 5.17 them, no, not so much as about the door; and there were Pharisees and doctors of the law sitting by, which were come out of every town of Galilee, and  
Mk. 2.2 Judea, and Jerusalem: and he preached the word  
Lk. 5.17 unto them, and the power of the Lord was present  
Mk. 2.3 to heal them. And they come unto him, bringing one sick of the palsy, which was borne of four.

4 And when they could not come nigh unto him for  
Lk. 5.19 the press, they went upon the house-top, and uncovered the roof where he was; and when they had  
Mk. 2.4 broken it up, they let down the bed wherein the sick  
5 of the palsy lay into the midst before him. When Jesus saw their faith, he said unto the sick of the  
Mt. 9.2 palsy, Son, be of good cheer, thy sins be forgiven thee.  
Mk. 2.6 But there were certain of the scribes and Pharisees  
7 sitting there, and reasoning in their hearts, Why doth this man thus speak blasphemies? Who can  
8 forgive sins but God only? And immediately, when Jesus perceived in his spirit that they so reasoned within themselves, he said unto them, Why reason  
9 ye these things in your hearts? Whether is it easier to say to the sick of the palsy, Thy sins be forgiven thee; or to say, Arise, and take up thy  
10 bed, and walk? But that ye may know that the Son of man hath power on earth to forgive sins (he  
11 saith to the sick of the palsy), I say unto thee, arise, and take up thy bed, and go thy way into  
12 thine house. And immediately he arose, took up

Mt. 9.8 the bed, and went forth before them all; and they  
 & were all amazed: and glorified God; which had  
 Mk.2.12 given such power to men, saying, We have seen  
 & strange things to-day; we never saw it on this  
 Lk.5.26 fashion.

## CHAPTER XV.

*Christ calls Levi — Goes up to Jerusalem to the second  
 Passover — Heals a man at the pool — Explains his  
 character in the Temple.*

Mk.2.13 AND he went forth again by the sea-side; and all  
 the multitude resorted unto him, and he taught  
 14 them. And as he passed by, he saw a publican  
 Lk. 5.27 named Levi,\* the son of Alpheus, sitting at the  
 Mk.2.14 receipt of custom, and said unto him, Follow me.  
 And he arose and followed him.

Jn. 5.1 After this there was a feast of the Jews: and  
 2 Jesus went up to Jerusalem. Now there is at  
 Jerusalem, by the sheep-market, a pool, which is  
 called in the Hebrew tongue, Bethesda, having five  
 3 porches. In these lay a great multitude of impo-  
 tent folk, of blind, halt, withered, waiting for the  
 4 moving of the water. For an angel went down at  
 a certain season into the pool, and troubled the  
 water; whosoever then first, after the troubling of  
 the water, stepped in, was made whole of whatso-  
 5 ever disease he had. And a certain man was  
 there, which had an infirmity thirty and eight

\* Called also Matthew.



Jn. 5. 6 years. When Jesus saw him lie, and knew that he had been now a long time in that case, he saith  
7 unto him, Wilt thou be made whole? The impotent man answered him, Sir, I have no man, when the water is troubled, to put me into the pool; but, while I am coming, another steppeth down before  
8 me. Jesus saith unto him, Rise, take up thy bed  
9 and walk. And immediately the man was made whole, and took up his bed, and walked; and on the same day was the Sabbath.

10 The Jews, therefore, said unto him that was cured, It is the Sabbath-day; it is not lawful for  
11 thee to carry thy bed. He answered them, He that made me whole, the same said unto me, Take  
12 up thy bed, and walk. Then asked they him, What man is that which said unto thee, Take up  
13 thy bed, and walk? And he that was healed wist not who it was; for Jesus had conveyed himself  
14 away, a multitude being in that place. Afterward Jesus findeth him in the temple, and said unto him, Behold, thou art made whole: sin no more, lest a  
15 worse thing come upon thee. The man departed and told the Jews that it was Jesus which had  
16 made him whole. And therefore did the Jews persecute Jesus, and sought to slay him, because he had done these things on the Sabbath-day.

17 But Jesus answered them, My Father worketh  
18 hitherto, and I work. Therefore the Jews sought the more to kill him, because he not only had broken the Sabbath, but said also, that God was his

Father, making himself equal with God. Then  
Jn. 5.19 answered Jesus, and said unto them, Verily, verily,  
I say unto you, The Son can do nothing of himself, but what he seeth the Father do ; for what things soever he doeth, these also doeth the Son  
20 likewise. For the Father loveth the Son, and showeth him all things that himself doeth : and he will show him greater works than these, that ye  
21 may marvel. For as the Father raiseth up the dead, and quickeneth them ; even so the Son quick-  
22 eneth whom he will. For the Father judgeth no man ; but hath committed all judgment unto the  
23 Son : that all men should honor the Son, even as they honor the Father. He that honoreth not the Son, honoreth not the Father which hath sent him.  
24 Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that heareth my word, and believeth on him that sent me, hath everlasting life, and shall not come into condemna-  
25 tion ; but is passed from death unto life. Verily, verily, I say unto you, The hour is coming, and now is, when the dead shall hear the voice of the Son  
26 of God ; and they that hear shall live. For as the Father hath life in himself, so hath he given to  
27 the Son to have life in himself : and hath given him authority to execute judgment also, because he  
28 is the Son of man. Marvel not at this ; for the hour is coming, in the which all that are in the  
29 graves shall hear his voice, and shall come forth ; they that have done good unto the resurrection of life ; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection

Jn. 5.30 of damnation. I can of mine own self do nothing; as I hear, I judge, and my judgment is just; because I seek not mine own will, but the will of the Father, which hath sent me.

31 If I bear witness of myself, my witness is not  
32 true. There is another that beareth witness of me,  
and I know that the witness which he witnesseth of  
33 me is true. Ye sent unto John, and he bear wit-  
34 ness unto the truth. But I receive not testimony  
from man; but these things I say, that ye might be  
35 saved. He was a burning and a shining light; and  
ye were willing for a season to rejoice in his light.

36 But I have greater witness than that of John;  
for the works which the Father hath given me to  
finish, the same works that I do, bear witness of  
37 me, that the Father hath sent me. And the Father  
himself, which hath sent me, hath borne witness of  
me. Ye have neither heard his voice at any time,  
38 nor seen his shape. And ye have not his word  
abiding in you; for whom he hath sent, him ye  
believe not.

39 Search the Scriptures; for in them ye think ye  
have eternal life; and they are they which testify  
40 of me. And ye will not come to me, that ye might  
have life.

41 I receive not honor from men. But I know  
42 you, that ye have not the love of God in you.  
43 I am come in my Father's name, and ye receive me  
not: if another shall come in his own name, him  
44 ye will receive. How can ye believe, which receive

honor one of another, and seek not the honor that  
 Jn. 5.45 cometh from God only? Do not think that I will  
 accuse you to the Father; there is one that ac-  
 46 cuseth you, even Moses, in whom ye trust. For,  
 had ye believed Moses, ye would have believed me;  
 47 for he wrote of me. But if ye believe not his  
 writings, how shall ye believe my words?

## CHAPTER XVI.

*The disciples pluck the ears of corn — Christ restores  
 the withered hand, and heals many.*

Lk. 6.1 AND it came to pass, on the second Sabbath after  
 the first, that Jesus went through the corn-fields;  
 Mt.12.1 and his disciples were a hungered, and began to  
 pluck the ears of corn, and did eat, rubbing them  
 Lk. 6.2 in their hands. And certain of the Pharisees said  
 unto them, Why do ye that which is not lawful  
 3 to do on the Sabbath-days? And Jesus answering  
 them said, Have ye not read so much as this, what  
 David did,\* when himself was a hungered, and they  
 Mk.2.26 which were with him, in the days of Abiathar the  
 Lk. 6.4 high priest? How he went into the house of God,  
 and did take and eat the shew-bread, and gave also  
 to them that were with him; which it is not lawful  
 Mt.12.5 to eat but for the priests alone?† Or, have ye not  
 read in the law, how that, on the Sabbath-days, the  
 priests in the temple profane the Sabbath, and are

\* 1 Sam. 21 : 1—7.

† Lev. 24 : 9.

Mt. 12.6 blameless? \* But I say unto you, That in this  
 7 place is one greater than the temple. But if ye  
 had known what this meaneth, I will have mercy,  
 and not sacrifice, † ye would not have condemned  
 Mk. 2.27 the guiltless; for the Sabbath was made for man,  
 28 and not man for the Sabbath; therefore the Son of  
 man is Lord also of the Sabbath.

Lk. 6.6 And it came to pass, also, on another Sabbath,  
 that he entered into the synagogue and taught;  
 and there was a man whose right hand was with-  
 7 ered. And the scribes and Pharisees watched him,  
 whether he would heal on the Sabbath-day; that  
 8 they might find an accusation against him. But he  
 knew their thoughts, and said to the man which had  
 the withered hand, Rise up, and stand forth in the  
 9 midst. And he arose, and stood forth. Then said  
 Jesus unto them, I will ask you one thing; Is it  
 lawful on the Sabbath-days to do good, or to do  
 Mt. 3.5 evil? to save life, or to destroy it? And when he  
 had looked round about on them with anger, being  
 grieved for the hardness of their hearts, he saith  
 unto the man, Stretch forth thine hand. And he  
 stretched it forth; and his hand was restored whole  
 Mt. 12.11 as the other. And he said unto them, What man  
 shall there be among you, that shall have one sheep,  
 and if it fall into a pit on the Sabbath-day, will he  
 12 not lay hold on it, and lift it out? How much,  
 then, is a man better than a sheep? Wherefore it  
 Lk. 6.11 is lawful to do well on the Sabbath-days. And

\* Num. 28 : 9, 15.

† Hos. 6 : 6; Mi. 6 : 6-8.



Mk. 3. 6 they were filled with madness; and the Pharisees went forth, and straightway took counsel with the Herodians against him, how they might destroy him. But when Jesus knew it, he withdrew himself with his disciples to the sea; and a great multitude from Galilee followed him, and from Judea, and from Jerusalem, and from Idumea, and from beyond Jordan; and they about Tyre and Sidon, a great multitude, when they had heard what great things he did, came unto him. And he spake to his disciples, that a small ship should wait on him, because of the multitude, lest they should throng him, for he had healed many; insomuch that they pressed upon him for to touch him, as many as had plagues. And unclean spirits, when they saw him, fell down before him, and cried, saying, Thou art the Son of God; and he healed them all, and charged them that they should not make him known; that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Isaiah\* the prophet, saying, Behold my servant, whom I have chosen; my beloved, in whom my soul is well pleased: I will put my Spirit upon him, and he shall show judgment to the Gentiles. He shall not strive nor cry; neither shall any man hear his voice in the streets. A bruised reed shall he not break, and smoking flax shall he not quench, till he send forth judgment unto victory. And in his name shall the Gentiles trust.

\* Is. 42: 1—4.



## CHAPTER XVII.

*Christ appoints the twelve apostles — Heals many —  
Commences his sermon on the mount.*

Lk. 6.12 AND *Jesus* went out into a mountain to pray, and  
 13 continued all night in prayer to God; and, when it  
 Mk. 3.13 was day, he called unto him his disciples whom he  
 14 would; and they came unto him. And he ordained  
 twelve, whom he also named apostles, that they should  
 be with him, and that he might send them forth to  
 15 preach, and to have power to heal sicknesses, and to  
 Mt. 10. cast out devils. Now the names of the twelve apos-  
 2—4 tles are these; the first, Simon, whom he also named  
 & Peter, and Andrew his brother; James, the son of  
 Mk. 3. Zebedee, and John his brother, and he surnamed  
 13—19 them Boanerges, which is, The sons of thunder;  
 & Philip and Bartholomew, Thomas and Matthew the  
 Lk. 6. publican; James, the son of Alpheus, and Judas,  
 12—16 the brother of James, *who is also called Lebbeus and  
 Thaddeus*; and Simon the Canaanite, called Zelotes,  
 and Judas Iscariot, which also betrayed him.

Lk. 6.17 And he came down with them, and stood in the  
 plain; and the company of his disciples *were there*,  
 and *also* a great multitude of people out of all Ju-  
 dea and Jerusalem, and from the sea-coast of Tyre  
 and Sidon, which came to hear him, and to be  
 18 healed of their diseases, and they that were vexed  
 19 with unclean spirits; and they were healed. And

the whole multitude sought to touch him ; for there went virtue out of him, and healed them all.

Mt. 5.1 And seeing the multitudes, he went up into a mountain ; and, when he was set, his disciples came  
 2 unto him ; and he opened his mouth, and taught  
 3 them, saying, Blessed are the poor in spirit ; for  
 4 theirs is the kingdom of heaven. Blessed are they  
 5 that mourn ; for they shall be comforted. Blessed  
 are the meek ; for they shall inherit the earth.  
 6 Blessed are they which do hunger and thirst after  
 7 righteousness ; for they shall be filled. Blessed are  
 8 the merciful ; for they shall obtain mercy. Blessed  
 are the pure in heart ; for they shall see God.  
 9 Blessed are the peacemakers ; for they shall be  
 10 called the children of God. Blessed are they which  
 are persecuted for righteousness' sake ; for theirs  
 11 is the kingdom of heaven. Blessed are ye when  
 Lk. 6.22 men shall revile you, and persecute you, and when  
 Mt. 5.11 they shall separate you from their company, and  
 shall say all manner of evil against you falsely, for  
 12 my sake. Rejoice, and be exceeding glad ; for  
 great is your reward in heaven ; for so persecuted  
 Lk. 6.24 they the prophets which were before you. But woe  
 unto you that are rich ! for ye have received your  
 25 consolation. Woe unto you that are full ! for ye  
 shall hunger. Woe unto you that laugh now ! for  
 26 ye shall mourn and weep. Woe unto you when all  
 men shall speak well of you ! for so did their fathers  
 to the false prophets.

Mt. 5.13 Ye are the salt of the earth ; but if the salt have

lost his savor, wherewith shall it be salted? It is  
thenceforth good for nothing, but to be cast out, and  
Mt. 5. 14 to be trodden under foot of men. Ye are the light  
of the world. A city that is set on a hill cannot  
15 be hid. Neither do men light a candle, and put it  
Mk. 4. 21 under a bushel, or under a bed, but on a candlestick,  
and it giveth light unto all that are in the house.  
Mt. 5. 16 Let your light so shine before men, that they may  
see your good works, and glorify your Father which  
is in heaven.

17 Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or  
the prophets; I am not come to destroy, but to ful-  
18 fil. For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and  
earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass  
19 from the law till all be fulfilled. Whosoever, there-  
fore, shall break one of these least commandments,  
and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least  
in the kingdom of heaven; but whosoever shall do  
and teach them, the same shall be called great in  
20 the kingdom of heaven. For I say unto you, Except  
your righteousness shall exceed the righteousness of  
the scribes and Pharisees, ye shall in no case  
enter into the kingdom of heaven.

## CHAPTER XVIII.

*Sermon continued.*

Mt. 5.21 YE have heard that it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not kill;\* and whosoever shall kill  
22 shall be in danger of the judgment; but I say unto you, That whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause, shall be in danger of the judgment; and whosoever shall say to his brother, Raca, shall be in danger of the council; but whosoever shall say, Thou fool, shall be in danger of hell fire.  
23 Therefore, if thou bring thy gift to the altar, and there rememberest that thy brother hath aught  
24 against thee, leave there thy gift before the altar, and go thy way, first be reconciled to thy brother,  
25 and then come and offer thy gift. Agree with thine adversary quickly, while thou art in the way with him, lest at any time the adversary deliver thee to the judge, and the judge deliver thee to the officer,  
26 and thou be cast into prison. Verily I say unto thee, Thou shalt by no means come out thence till thou hast paid the uttermost farthing.  
27 Ye have heard that it was said by them of old  
28 time, Thou shalt not commit adultery;† but I say unto you, That whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her, hath committed adultery with her  
29 already in his heart. And if thy right eye offend

\* Ex. 20 : 13; 21 : 14; Lev. 24 : 21.

† Ex. 20 : 14; Lev. 20 : 10.

thee, pluck it out, and cast it from thee ; for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not that thy whole body should be  
 Mt. 5.30 cast into hell. And if thy right hand offend thee, cut it off, and cast it from thee ; for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not that thy whole body should be cast into  
 31 hell. It hath been said, Whosoever shall put away his wife, let him give her a writing of divorce-  
 32 ment ; \* but I say unto you, that whosoever shall put away his wife, saving for the cause of fornication,  
 Mk.  
 10.11 and marry another, committeth adultery ; *and he*  
 Mt.5.32 causeth her to commit adultery ; and whosoever shall marry her that is divorced committeth adultery.

33 Again, ye have heard that it hath been said by them of old time, Thou shalt not forsware thyself, but  
 34 shalt perform unto the Lord thine oaths.† But I say unto you, Swear not at all ; neither by heaven,  
 35 for it is God's throne ; nor by the earth, for it is his footstool ; neither by Jerusalem, for it is the city  
 36 of the great King ; neither shalt thou swear by thy head, because thou canst not make one hair white  
 37 or black. But let your communication be, Yea, yea : nay, nay ; for whatsoever is more than these cometh of evil.

38 Ye have heard that it hath been said, An eye for  
 39 an eye, and a tooth for a tooth ;‡ but I say unto

\* Deut. 24 : 1. † Ex. 20 : 16 ; Lev. 19 : 12. ‡ Ex. 21 : 24, 25. Deut. 19 : 21.

you, That ye resist not evil; but whosoever shall smite thee on thy right cheek, turn to him the other  
Mt. 5.40 also. And if any man will sue thee at the law, and take away thy coat, let him have thy cloak also.

41 And whosoever shall compel thee to go a mile, go  
42 with him twain. Give to him that asketh thee, and from him that would borrow of thee, turn not thou  
Lk. 6.30 away; and of him that taketh away thy goods, ask them not again.

Mt. 5.43 Ye have heard that it hath been said, Thou shalt  
44 love thy neighbor, and hate thine enemy;\* but I say unto you, Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully use you, and persecute  
45 you; that ye may be the children of your Father which is in heaven: for he maketh his sun to rise on the evil and on the good, and sendeth rain on  
46 the just and on the unjust. For, if ye love them which love you, what reward have ye? Do not

Lk. 6.32 even the publicans and sinners also love those that

Mt. 5.47 love them? And if ye salute your brethren only, what do ye more than others? Do not even the

Lk. 6.33 publicans so? And if ye do good to them which do good to you, what thank have ye? for sinners

34 also do even the same. And if ye lend to them of whom ye hope to receive, what thank have ye? for sinners also lend to sinners, to receive as much  
35 again. But love ye your enemies, and do good, and

\* Lev. 19 : 18. Deut. 23 : 6. Ps. 139 : 21, 22.



Lk. 6.35 lend, hoping for nothing again; and your reward shall be great, and ye shall be the children of the Highest; for he is kind unto the unthankful, and to the evil.

Mt 5.48 Be ye, therefore, perfect, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect.

---

## CHAPTER XIX.

*Sermon continued.*

Mt. 6.1 TAKE heed that ye do not your alms before men, to be seen of them; otherwise ye have no reward  
2 of your Father which is in heaven. Therefore, when thou doest thine alms, do not sound a trumpet before thee, as the hypocrites do in the synagogues and in the streets, that they may have glory of men. Verily I say unto you, They have their reward.  
3 But when thou doest alms, let not thy left hand  
4 know what thy right hand doeth; that thine alms may be in secret, and thy Father, which seeth in secret, himself shall reward thee openly.

5 And when thou prayest, thou shalt not be as the hypocrites are; for they love to pray standing in the synagogues and in the corners of the streets, that they may be seen of men. Verily I say unto  
6 you, They have their reward. But thou, when thou prayest, enter into thy closet; and, when thou hast shut thy door, pray to thy Father which is in secret; and thy Father, which seeth in secret, shall reward

Mt. 6.7 thee openly. But when ye pray, use not vain repetitions, as the heathen do ; for they think they  
8 shall be heard for their much speaking. Be ye not, therefore, like unto them ; for your Father knoweth what things ye have need of, before ye ask him.

Lk. 11.1 And one of his disciples said unto him, Lord, teach us to pray, as John also taught his disciples.

Mt. 6.9 And he said unto them, After this manner, therefore, pray ye : Our Father, which art in heaven ;  
10 hallowed be thy name. Thy kingdom come. Thy  
11 will be done in earth as it is in heaven. Give us  
12 this day our daily bread. And forgive us our debts,  
13 as we forgive our debtors. And lead us not into temptation ; but deliver us from evil ; for thine is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever ; Amen.

Mk. 11.25 And, when ye stand praying, forgive if ye have  
Mt. 6.14 aught against any. For if ye forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will also forgive you ;  
15 but if ye forgive not men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive your trespasses.

Lk. 11.5 Which of you shall have a friend, and shall go unto him at midnight, and say unto him, Friend, lend me  
6 three loaves ; for a friend of mine in his journey is come to me, and I have nothing to set before him ?  
7 and he from within shall answer and say, Trouble me not ; the door is now shut, and my children are  
8 with me in bed ; I cannot rise and give thee. I say unto you, Though he will not rise and give him, because he is his friend ; yet because of his impor-

tunity, he will rise and give him as many as he  
Lk.11.9 needeth. And I say unto you, Ask, and it shall  
be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock,  
10 and it shall be opened unto you. For every one  
that asketh, receiveth; and he that seeketh, find-  
eth; and to him that knocketh, it shall be opened.  
11 If a son shall ask bread of any of you that is a  
father, will he give him a stone? or, if he ask a  
12 fish, will he, for a fish, give him a serpent? Or, if  
he shall ask an egg, will he offer him a scorpion?  
13 If ye, then, being evil, know how to give good gifts  
unto your children, how much more shall your  
Mt.7.11 heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit and *all* good  
things to them that ask him.

Mt.6.16 Moreover, when ye fast, be not, as the hypocrites,  
of a sad countenance; for they disfigure their  
faces, that they may appear unto men to fast. Ver-  
17 ily, I say unto you, They have their reward. But  
thou, when thou fastest, anoint thine head, and wash  
18 thy face; that thou appear not unto men to fast, but  
unto thy Father which is in secret; and thy Father,  
which seeth in secret, shall reward thee openly.

19 Lay not up for yourselves treasures upon earth,  
where moth and rust doth corrupt, and where  
20 thieves break through and steal; but lay up for  
yourselves treasures in heaven, where neither moth  
nor rust doth corrupt, and where thieves do not  
21 break through nor steal; for where your treasure is,  
there will your heart be also.

22 The light of the body is the eye; if, therefore,

Mt. 6. thine eye be single, thy whole body shall be full of  
 23 light; but if thine eye be evil, thy whole body shall  
 Lk. be full of darkness. Take heed, therefore, that the  
 11.35 light which is in thee be not darkness; for, if the  
 Mt. 6. 23 light that is in thee be darkness, how great is that  
 Lk. darkness! But if thy whole body be full of light,  
 11.36 having no part dark, the whole shall be full of light,  
 as when the bright shining of a candle doth give  
 thee light.

---

## CHAPTER XX.

*Sermon continued.*

Mt. 6. 24 No man can serve two masters; for either he will  
 hate the one and love the other, or else he will hold  
 to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve  
 25 God and mammon. Therefore I say unto you, Take  
 no thought for your life, what ye shall eat, or what  
 ye shall drink; nor yet for your body, what ye  
 shall put on. Is not the life more than meat, and  
 26 the body than raiment? Behold the fowls of the  
 air; for they sow not, neither do they reap, nor  
 gather into barns; yet your heavenly Father feed-  
 eth them. Are ye not much better than they?  
 27 Which of you, by taking thought, can add one cubit  
 Lk. to his stature? If ye, then, be not able to do that  
 12.26 thing which is least, why take ye thought for the  
 Mt. 6. 28 rest? And why take ye thought for raiment?

Consider the lilies of the field, how they grow ; they  
Mt.6.29 toil not, neither do they spin ; and yet I say unto  
you, That even Solomon, in all his glory, was not  
30 arrayed like one of these. Wherefore, if God so  
clothe the grass, which to-day is in the field, and  
to-morrow is cast into the oven, shall he not much  
31 more clothe you ? O ye of little faith ! Therefore  
take no thought, saying, What shall we eat ? or,  
What shall we drink ? or Wherewithal shall we be  
32 clothed ? (for after all these things do the Gentiles  
seek ; ) for your heavenly Father knoweth that ye  
33 have need of all these things. But seek ye first  
the kingdom of God and his righteousness, and all  
34 these things shall be added unto you. Take, there-  
fore, no thought for the morrow ; for the morrow  
shall take thought for the things of itself. Suf-  
Lk. 12.32 ficient unto the day is the evil thereof. Fear not,  
little flock, for it is your Father's good pleasure to  
33 give you the kingdom. Sell that ye have, and give  
alms ; provide yourselves bags which wax not old,  
a treasure in the heavens that faileth not, where no  
35 thief approacheth, neither moth corrupteth. Let  
your loins be girded about, and your lights burn-  
36 ing, and ye yourselves like unto men that wait  
for their lord, when he will return from the wedding,  
that when he cometh and knocketh, they may open  
37 unto him immediately. Blessed are those servants  
whom the lord, when he cometh, shall find watch-  
ing ; verily I say unto you, that he shall gird him-  
self, and make them to sit down to meat, and will



Lk. 12.38 come forth and serve them. And if he shall come in the second watch, or come in the third watch, 39 and find them so, blessed are those servants. And this know, that if the good man of the house had known what hour the thief would come, he would have watched, and not have suffered his house to be 40 broken through. Be ye, therefore, ready also; for the Son of man cometh at an hour when ye think not.

Mt.7.1 Judge not, that ye be not judged. For with 2 what judgment ye judge, ye shall be judged; and with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured to Lk.6.37 you again. Condemn not, and ye shall not be con- 38 demned; forgive, and ye shall be forgiven; give, and it shall be given unto you; good measure, pressed down and shaken together, and running over, shall 40 men give into your bosom. The disciple is not above his master; but every one that is perfect shall be as 41 his master. And why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy brother's eye, but perceivest not the beam 42 that is in thine own eye? Either how canst thou say to thy brother, Brother, let me pull out the mote that is in thine eye, when thou thyself beholdest not the beam that is in thine own eye? Thou hypocrite! cast out first the beam out of thine own eye, and then shalt thou see clearly to pull out the Mt.7.12 mote that is in thy brother's eye. Therefore all things whatsoever ye would that men should do to you, do ye even so to them; for this is the law and the prophets.



Mt. 7.13 Enter ye in at the strait gate; for wide is the gate, and broad is the way that leadeth to destruction, and many there be which go in thereat: because strait is the gate, and narrow is the way, which leadeth unto life, and few there be that find it.

6 Give not that which is holy unto the dogs; neither cast ye your pearls before swine, lest they trample them under their feet, and turn again and rend you. Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly they are ravening wolves. Ye shall know them by their fruits. Do men gather grapes of thorns, or figs of thistles? Even so, every good tree bringeth forth good fruit; but a corrupt tree bringeth forth evil fruit. A good tree cannot bring forth evil fruit, neither can a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit. Every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire. Wherefore by their fruits ye shall know them. A good man, out of the good treasure of his heart, bringeth forth that which is good; and an evil man, out of the evil treasure of his heart, bringeth forth that which is evil; for of the abundance of the heart his mouth speaketh.

Mt. 7.21 Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven. Many will say unto me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have cast out devils? and in thy name done

Mt. 7.23 many wonderful works? And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you : depart from me, ye that work iniquity.

Lk. 6.46 And why call ye me Lord, Lord ; and do not the 47 things which I say? Whosoever cometh to me, and heareth my sayings, and doeth them, I will show 48 you to whom he is like. He is like a wise man which built a house, and digged deep, and laid the

Mt. 7.25 foundation on a rock ; and the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat vehemently upon that house ; and it fell not : for it was 26 founded upon a rock. And every one that heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them not, shall be likened unto a foolish man, which built his house 27 upon the sand ; and the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house ; and it fell, and great was the fall of it.

28 And it came to pass when Jesus had ended these

Lk. 7.1 sayings in the audience of all the people, they were 29 astonished at his doctrine ; for he taught them as

Mt. 8.1 one having authority, and not as the scribes. And when he was come down from the mountain, great multitudes followed him.

---

## CHAPTER XXI.

*Christ heals the centurion's servant — Raises to life the widow's son — and answers John's messengers.*

Lk. 7.1 AND he entered into Capernaum. And a certain 2 centurion's servant, who was dear unto him, was

Lk. 7. 3 sick, and ready to die. And, when he heard of  
Jesus, he sent unto him the elders of the Jews,  
beseeching him that he would come and heal his  
4 servant. And, when they came to Jesus, they be-  
sought him instantly, saying, That he was worthy  
5 for whom he should do this ; for he loveth our  
Mt. 7. 7 nation, and he hath built us a synagogue. Jesus  
Lk. 7. 6 saith, I will come and heal him ; and he went with  
them. And when he was now not far from the  
house, the centurion came, saying unto him, Lord,  
trouble not thyself ; for I am not worthy that thou  
7 shouldst enter under my roof ; wherefore neither  
thought I myself worthy to come unto thee ; but  
say in a word, and my servant shall be healed ;  
Mt. 7. 8 for I am a man under authority, having under me  
Lk. 7. 8 soldiers, and I say unto one, Go, and he goeth ; and  
to another, Come, and he cometh ; and to my ser-  
9 vant, Do this, and he doeth it. When Jesus heard  
these things, he marvelled at him, and turned him  
about, and said unto the people that followed him,  
I say unto you, I have not found so great faith, no,  
Mt. 8. 11 not in Israel. And I say unto you, That many  
shall come from the east and west, and shall sit  
down with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, in the  
12 kingdom of heaven. But the children of the king-  
dom shall be cast out into outer darkness ; there  
13 shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth. And Jesus  
said unto the centurion, Go thy way ; and, as thou  
hast believed, so be it done unto thee. And his  
Lk. 7. 10 servant was healed in the self-same hour. And

they that were sent, returning to the house, found the servant whole.

Lk. 7.11 And it came to pass the day after, that he went into a city called Nain; and many of his disciples  
12 went with him, and much people. Now when he came nigh to the gate of the city, behold, there was a dead man carried out, the only son of his mother, and she was a widow; and much people of the city  
13 was with her. And when the Lord saw her he had compassion on her, and said unto her, Weep not.  
14 And he came and touched the bier; and they that bare him stood still. And he said, Young man, I  
15 say unto thee, Arise. And he that was dead, sat up, and began to speak. And he delivered him to  
16 his mother. And there came a fear on all; and they glorified God, saying, That a great prophet is risen up among us; and, That God hath visited his  
17 people. And this rumor of him went forth throughout all Judea, and throughout all the region round  
18 about. And the disciples of John showed him all these things.

19 And John, calling unto him two of his disciples, sent them to Jesus, saying, Art thou he that should  
20 come? or look we for another? When the men were come unto him, they said, John Baptist hath sent us unto thee, saying, Art thou he that should  
Mt. 11.3 come? or do we look for another? And in that  
Lk. 7.21 same hour he cured many of their infirmities and plagues, and of evil spirits; and unto many that  
22 were blind he gave sight. Then Jesus answering,

said unto them, Go your way, and tell John what things ye have seen and heard; how that the blind see, the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed, the deaf hear, the dead are raised, and the poor have the gospel preached unto them.\* And blessed is he whosoever shall not be offended in me.

Mt.11.7 And as they departed, Jesus began to say unto the multitudes concerning John, What went ye out into the wilderness to see? A reed shaken with the wind? But what went ye out for to see? A man clothed in soft raiment? Behold, they which are gorgeously apparelled and live delicately are in kings' houses. But what went ye out for to see? A prophet? yea, I say unto you, and more than a prophet. For this is he, of whom it is written,† Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee. Verily I say unto you, Among them that are born of women, there hath not risen a greater than John the Baptist; notwithstanding, he that is least in the kingdom of heaven is greater than he. And from the days of John the Baptist, until now, the kingdom of heaven suffereth violence, and the violent take it by force. For all the prophets and the law prophesied until John. And if ye will receive it, this is Elijah‡ which was for to come. He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.

\* Is. 35 : 5—7.

† Mal. 3 : 1.

‡ Mal. 4 : 5.



## CHAPTER XXII.

*Christ vindicates the woman who washed his feet in the Pharisee's house.*

Lk. 7.29    AND all the people that heard him, and the publicans, justified God, being baptized with the baptism  
30 of John. But the Pharisees and lawyers rejected the counsel of God against themselves, being not  
31 baptized of him. And the Lord said, Whereunto then shall I liken the men of this generation? and  
32 to what are they like? They are like unto children sitting in the market-place, and calling one to another, and saying, We have piped unto you, and ye have not danced; we have mourned to you, and  
33 ye have not wept. For John the Baptist came neither eating bread, nor drinking wine; and ye  
34 say, He hath a devil. The Son of man is come eating and drinking, and ye say, Behold, a gluttonous man, and a wine-bibber, a friend of publicans and sinners! But wisdom is justified of all  
35 her children.

36    And one of the Pharisees desired him that he would eat with him, and he went into the Pharisee's house and sat down to meat. And, behold, a woman in the city, which was a sinner, when she knew that Jesus sat at meat in the Pharisee's house,  
38 brought an alabaster box of ointment, and stood at his feet behind him weeping, and began to wash his feet with tears, and did wipe them with the hairs of her head, and kissed his feet, and anointed them



Lk. 7.39 with the ointment. Now when the Pharisee which had bidden him saw it, he spake within himself, saying, This man, if he were a prophet, would have known who and what manner of woman this is that  
40 toucheth him ; for she is a sinner. And Jesus answering, said unto him, Simon, I have somewhat to say unto thee. And he said, Master, say on.  
41 There was a certain creditor, which had two debtors ; the one owed five hundred pence, and the other  
42 fifty. And when they had nothing to pay, he frankly forgave them both. Tell me, therefore, which of  
43 them will love him most ? Simon answered and said, I suppose that he to whom he forgave most. And he said unto him, Thou hast rightly judged.  
44 And he turned to the woman, and said unto Simon, Seest thou this woman ? I entered into thine house, thou gavest me no water for my feet ; but she hath washed my feet with tears, and wiped them with the  
45 hairs of her head. Thou gavest me no kiss ; but this woman, since the time I came in, hath not  
46 ceased to kiss my feet. My head with oil thou didst not anoint ; but this woman hath anointed my feet  
47 with ointment. Wherefore, I say unto thee, Her sins, which are many, are forgiven ; for she loved much : but to whom little is forgiven, the same loveth little.  
48 And he said unto her, Thy sins are forgiven.  
49 And they that sat at meat with him, began to say within themselves, Who is this that forgiveth sins  
50 also ? And he said to the woman, Thy faith hath saved thee : go in peace.

Lk. 8.1 And it came to pass afterward, that he again went throughout every city and village, preaching and showing the glad tidings of the kingdom of God ;  
 2 and the twelve were with him, and certain women, which had been healed of evil spirits and infirmities, Mary called Magdalene, out of whom went seven  
 3 devils, and Joanna the wife of Chusa, Herod's steward, and Susanna, and many others, which ministered  
 Mk. 3.19 unto him of their substance ; and they went  
 20 into a house. And the multitude cometh together again, so that they could not so much as eat bread.  
 21 And when his friends heard of it, they went out to lay hold on him ; for they said, He is beside himself.

---

## CHAPTER XXIII.

*Christ heals a demoniac, and is accused of casting out devils through Beelzebub.*

Mt. THEN was brought unto him one possessed with a  
 12.22 devil, blind and dumb ; and he healed him, inso-much that the blind and dumb both spake and saw.  
 23 And all the people were amazed, and said, Is not  
 Mk. 3.22 this the son of David ? But when the scribes and Pharisees, which came down from Jerusalem,  
 Mt. heard it, they said, This fellow doth not cast out  
 12.24 devils, but by Beelzebub, the prince of the devils.  
 25 And Jesus knew their thoughts, and said unto them, Every kingdom divided against itself is brought to desolation ; and every city or house

- Mt. divided against itself shall not stand. And if  
 12.26 Satan cast out Satan, he is divided against himself;  
 27 how shall, then, his kingdom stand? And if I by  
 Beelzebub cast out devils, by whom do your chil-  
 dren cast them out? therefore they shall be your  
 23 judges. But if I cast out devils by the Spirit of  
 God, then the kingdom of God is come unto you.
- Mk.3.27 No man can enter into a strong man's house. and  
 spoil his goods, except he will first bind the strong  
 Mt. man; and then he will spoil his house. He that is  
 12.30 not with me is against me; and he that gathereth  
 31 not with me, scattereth abroad. Wherefore I say  
 unto you, All manner of sin and blasphemy shall  
 be forgiven unto men; but the blasphemy against  
 the Holy Ghost shall not be forgiven unto men.
- 32 And whosoever speaketh a word against the Son of  
 man, it shall be forgiven him; but whosoever  
 speaketh against the Holy Ghost, it shall not be  
 forgiven him, neither in this world, neither in the  
 33 world to come. Either make the tree good, and his  
 fruit good; or else make the tree corrupt, and his fruit  
 34 corrupt: for the tree is known by his fruit. O gen-  
 eration of vipers! how can ye, being evil, speak  
 good things? for out of the abundance of the heart  
 35 the mouth speaketh. A good man, out of the good  
 treasure of the heart, bringeth forth good things:  
 and an evil man, out of the evil treasure, bringeth  
 36 forth evil things. But I say unto you, That every  
 idle word that men shall speak, they shall give ac-  
 37 count thereof in the day of judgment. For by thy

words thou shalt be justified, and by thy words thou shalt be condemned.

<sup>Mt.</sup>  
<sup>12.38</sup> Then certain of the scribes and of the Pharisees answered, saying, Master, we would see a sign from thee. But he answered and said unto them, An evil and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign; and there shall no sign be given to it, but the sign of the prophet Jonah;\* for as Jonah was three days and three nights in the whale's belly; so shall the Son of man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth. The men of Nineveh shall rise in judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it: because they repented at the preaching of Jonah;† and, behold, a greater than Jonah is here.  
42 The queen of the south shall rise up in the judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it: for she came from the uttermost parts of the earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon;‡ and, behold, a greater than Solomon is here. When the unclean spirit has gone out of a man, he walketh through dry places, seeking rest, and findeth none. Then he saith, I will return into my house from whence I came out; and when he is come, he findeth it empty, swept and garnished. Then goeth he, and taketh with himself seven other spirits more wicked than himself, and they enter in and dwell there: and the last state of that man is worse than the first. Even so shall it be also unto this wicked generation.

\* Jonah 1: 17.

† Jo. 3: 5—9.

‡ 1 Ki. 10 1—9.

Lk.  
11.27 And it came to pass, as he spake these things,  
a certain woman of the company lifted up her voice,  
and said unto him, Blessed is the womb which bare  
28 thee, and the paps which thou hast sucked. But  
he said, Yea, rather blessed are they that hear the  
word of God, and keep it.

Mt.  
12.46 While he yet talked to the people, behold, his  
Mk.3.  
32,33 mother and his brethren stood without, desiring to  
Lk. 8.19 speak with him. And they could not come at him  
Mt.  
12.47 for the multitude that sat about him. Then one  
said unto him, Behold thy mother and thy brethren  
48 stand without, desiring to speak with thee. But  
he answered and said unto him that told him, Who  
49 is my mother? and who are my brethren? And he  
stretched forth his hand towards his disciples, and  
50 said, Behold my mother and my brethren! For  
whosoever shall do the will of my Father which is  
in heaven, the same is my brother, and sister, and  
mother.

Lk.  
11.37 And as he spake, a certain Pharisee besought  
him to dine with him; and he went in, and sat  
38 down to meat. And when the Pharisee saw it, he  
 marvelled that he had not first washed before dinner.  
39 And the Lord said unto him, Now do ye, Pharisees,  
make clean the outside of the cup and the platter;  
but your inward part is full of ravening and wicked-  
40 ness. Ye fools! did not he that made that which is  
41 without, make that which is within also? But  
rather give alms of such things as ye have; and,  
42 behold, all things are clean unto you. But woe



unto you, Pharisees! for ye tithe mint, and rue,  
and all manner of herbs, and pass over judgment  
and the love of God; these ought ye to have done,  
<sup>Lk.</sup>  
<sup>11.43</sup> and not to leave the other undone. Woe unto you,

Pharisees! for ye love the uppermost seats in the  
44 synagogues, and greetings in the markets. Woe  
unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye  
are as graves which appear not, and the men that  
walk over them are not aware of them.

45 Then answered one of the lawyers, and said unto  
him, Master, thus saying thou reproachest us also.

46 And he said, Woe unto you also, ye lawyers! for  
ye lade men with burdens grievous to be borne, and  
ye yourselves touch not the burdens with one of

47 your fingers. Woe unto you! for ye build the  
sepulchres of the prophets, and your fathers killed

48 them. Truly ye bear witness that ye allow the  
deeds of your fathers: for they indeed killed them,

49 and ye build their sepulchres. Therefore also said  
the wisdom of God, I will send them prophets and  
apostles, and some of them they shall slay and per-

50 secute; that the blood of all the prophets, which  
was shed from the foundation of the world, may be

51 required of this generation; from the blood of Abel\*  
to the blood of Zachariah, which perished between  
the altar and the temple; verily I say unto you, It

52 shall be required of this generation. Woe unto you,  
lawyers! for ye have taken away the key of knowl-

53 edge; ye entered not in yourselves, and them that  
were entering in ye hindered. And as he said

\* Gen. 4: 8—10.



these things unto them, the scribes and Pharisees began to urge him vehemently, and to provoke him <sup>Lk.</sup> 11.54 to speak of many things, laying wait for him, and seeking to catch something out of his mouth, that they might accuse him.

## CHAPTER XXIV.

*The foolish rich man — The faithful servant rewarded, and the unfaithful punished — The people discern not the signs of the times.*

Lk. 12.1 IN the mean time, when there were gathered together an innumerable multitude of people, inso-much that they trode one upon another, he began to say unto his disciples first of all, Beware ye of the leaven of the Pharisees, which is hypocrisy.

13 And one of the company said unto him, Master, speak to my brother, that he divide the inheritance

14 with me. And he said unto him, Man, who made

15 me a judge, or a divider over you? And he said unto them, Take heed, and beware of covetousness: for a man's life consisteth not in the abundance of

16 the things which he possesseth. And he spake a parable unto them saying, The ground of a certain

17 rich man brought forth plentifully: and he thought within himself, saying, What shall I do, because I

18 have no room where to bestow my fruits? And he said, This will I do; I will pull down my barns, and build greater; and there will I bestow all my

Lk.  
12.19 fruits and my goods. And I will say to my soul,  
Soul, thou hast much goods laid up for many years :  
20 take thine ease, eat, drink, and be merry. But  
God said unto him, Thou fool ! this night thy soul  
shall be required of thee ; then whose shall those  
21 things be which thou hast provided ? So is he that  
layeth up treasure for himself, and is not rich toward  
God.

Lk.  
12.41 Then Peter said unto him, Lord, speakest thou  
42 this parable unto us, or even to all ? And the  
Lord said, Who then is that faithful and wise steward,  
whom his lord shall make ruler over his household,  
to give them their portion of meat in due  
43 season ? Blessed is that servant, whom his lord,  
44 when he cometh, shall find so doing. Of a truth I  
say unto you, that he will make him ruler over all  
45 that he hath. But and if that servant say in his  
heart, My lord delayeth his coming ; and shall begin  
to beat the men-servants, and maidens, and to  
46 eat and drink, and to be drunken ; the lord of that  
servant will come in a day when he looketh not for  
him, and at an hour when he is not aware, and will  
cut him in sunder, and will appoint him his portion  
Mt.  
24.51 with the hypocrites and unbelievers. There shall  
Lk.  
12.47 be weeping and gnashing of teeth. And that servant,  
which knew his Lord's will, and prepared not  
himself, neither did according to his will, shall be  
48 beaten with many stripes. But he that knew not,  
and did commit things worthy of stripes, shall be  
beaten with few stripes. For unto whomsoever

much is given, of him shall be much required; and to whom men have committed much, of him they will ask the more.

Lk.  
12.54 And he said also to the people, When ye see a cloud rise out of the west, straightway ye say,  
55 There cometh a shower; and so it is. And when ye see the south wind blow, ye say, There will be  
56 heat; and it cometh to pass. Ye hypocrites! ye can discern the face of the sky, and of the earth;  
57 but how is it that ye do not discern this time? Yea, and why even of yourselves judge ye not what is right?

---

## CHAPTER XXV.

*The barren fig-tree — The parable of the sower and the application.*

Lk. 13.1 THERE were present at that season some that told him of the Galileans, whose blood Pilate had mingled with their sacrifices. And Jesus answering said unto them, Suppose ye that these Galileans were sinners above all the Galileans, because they  
3 suffered such things? I tell you, Nay; but, except  
4 ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish. Or those eighteen upon whom the tower in Siloam fell, and slew them, think ye that they were sinners above  
5 all men that dwelt in Jerusalem? I tell you, Nay; but, except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish.

Lk. 13.6 He spake also this parable: A certain man had a fig-tree planted in his vineyard; and he came and sought fruit thereon, and found none. Then said he unto the dresser of his vineyard, Behold, these three years I come seeking fruit on this fig-tree, and find none: cut it down; why cumbereth it the ground? And he answering, said unto him, Lord, let it alone this year also, till I shall dig about it, and dung it. And if it bear fruit, well; and if not, then after that thou shalt cut it down.

Mt. 13.1 The same day went Jesus out of the house, and sat by the sea-side. And great multitudes were gathered together unto him, so that he went into a ship, and sat; and the whole multitude stood on the shore. And he spake many things unto them in parables, saying, Hearken; behold, a sower went

Mk. 4.4 forth to sow; and it came to pass, as he sowed, some fell by the way side, and the fowls of the air came and devoured it up. And some fell on stony ground, where it had not much earth: and immediately it sprang up, because it had no depth of earth; but when the sun was up, it was scorched; and, because it had no root, it withered away. And some fell among thorns, and the thorns grew up, and choked it, and it yielded no fruit. And other fell on good ground, and did yield fruit that sprang up, and increased, and brought forth, some thirty, and some sixty, and some a hundred

Lk. 8.8 fold. And, when he had said these things, he cried, He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.

Mk.4.10 And when he was alone, his disciples asked him,  
 &  
 Lk.8.9 saying, What might this parable be? and why  
 &  
 Mt. speakest thou unto them in parables? He answered  
 13.11 and said unto them, Because unto you it is given to  
 know the mysteries of the kingdom of God; but  
 unto them that are without it is not given; *there-*  
 Mt. *fore*, all these things are done in parables; because  
 13.13 they seeing, see not; and hearing, they hear not;  
 14 neither do they understand. And in them is ful-  
 filled the prophecy of Isaiah,\* which saith, By hear-  
 ing ye shall hear, and shall not understand; and  
 15 seeing ye shall see, and shall not perceive: for this  
 people's heart is waxed gross, and their ears are dull  
 of hearing, and their eyes they have closed; lest at  
 any time they should see with their eyes, and hear  
 with their ears, and should understand with their  
 heart, and should be converted; and I should heal  
 16 them. But blessed are your eyes, for they see;  
 17 and your ears, for they hear. For verily I say unto  
 you, That many prophets and righteous men and  
 Lk. 10. kings have desired to see those things which ye see,  
 24 and have not seen them; and to hear those things  
 Mk.4.13 which ye hear, and have not heard them. And he  
 said unto them, Know ye not this parable? and  
 how, then, will ye know all parables?  
 Lk. 8. Now the parable is this: The seed is the word  
 11,12 of God. Those by the way-side are they that hear;  
 &  
 Mk.4.15 but, when they have heard, Satan cometh imme-  
 diately, and taketh away the word that was sown

\* Is. 6: 9, 10.



in their hearts, lest they should believe and be  
Mt. saved. But he that received the seed into stony  
13.20 places, the same is he that heareth the word, and  
21 anon with joy receiveth it; yet hath he not root in  
himself, but dureth for a while; for when tribula-  
tion or persecution ariseth because of the word, by  
22 and by he is offended. He also that received seed  
among the thorns, is he that heareth the word; and  
the care of this world, and the deceitfulness of  
Mk.4.19 riches, and the lusts of other things entering in,  
Mt. choke the word, and he becometh unfruitful. But  
13.23 he that received seed into the good ground, is he  
that heareth the word and understandeth it; which  
also beareth fruit with patience, and bringeth forth,  
some a hundred-fold, some sixty, some thirty. And  
Mk.4.24 he said unto them, Take heed, therefore, how ye  
Lk.8. hear, for nothing is secret that shall not be made  
17, 18 manifest; neither anything hid that shall not be  
known and come abroad; with what measure ye  
mete, it shall be measured to you again: and unto  
Mt. 13. you that hear, shall more be given. For whosoever  
12 hath, to him shall be given, and he shall have  
more abundance; but whosoever hath not, from him  
shall be taken away even that he hath.



## CHAPTER XXVI.

*The tares and the wheat — The mustard-seed — The leaven in the meal — The treasure in the field — The pearls — The net — Explanation.*

Mt. ANOTHER parable put he forth unto them, saying,  
13.24 The kingdom of heaven is likened unto a man which  
25 sowed good seed in his field ; but while men slept,  
his enemy came and sowed tares among the wheat,  
26 and went his way. But when the blade was sprung  
up, and brought forth fruit, then appeared the tares  
27 also. So the servants of the householder came and  
said unto him, Sir, didst not thou sow good seed in  
28 thy field ? from whence, then, hath it tares ? He  
said unto them, An enemy hath done this. The  
servants said unto him, Wilt thou then that we go  
29 and gather them up ? But he said, Nay ; lest  
while ye gather up the tares, ye root up also the  
30 wheat with them. Let both grow together until  
the harvest ; and in the time of harvest I will say  
to the reapers, Gather ye together first the tares,  
and bind them in bundles to burn them ; but gather  
the wheat into my barn.

Mk.4.26 And he said, So is the kingdom of God, as if a  
27 man should cast seed into the ground ; and should  
sleep and rise night and day, and the seed should  
28 spring and grow up, he knoweth not how. For the  
earth bringeth forth fruit of herself ; first the  
blade, then the ear, after that the full corn in the

1

U.S.A.

2

3

4

5

MR. 4.29 ear. But when the fruit is brought  
diately he putteth in the sickle, because  
is come.

30 And he said, Whereunto shall we  
dom of God? or with what comp  
31 compare it? It is like a grain of  
32 which a man took, and sowed in the  
33 indeed is the least of all seeds;  
grown, it is the greatest among herbs  
a tree; so that the birds of the air  
in the branches thereof.

34 Another parable spake he unto them, saying, The  
dom of heaven is like unto leaven, which  
took, and hid in three measures of meal,  
35 whole was leavened. And all these

MR. 4.34 Jesus unto the multitude in parables; for  
many such parables spake he unto them,  
36 as they were able to hear it; and he

13.34  
MR. 4.34 he spake he not unto them. And when he  
alone, he expounded all things to his

37 That it might be fulfilled which was  
14.40 prophet,\* saying, I will open my mouth  
I will utter things which have been  
from the foundation of the world.

38 Then Jesus sent the multitude away  
into the house; and his disciples came  
saying, Declare unto us the parables  
39 of the field. He answered and said unto  
He that soweth the good seed is the  
40 man; the field is the world; the

Mt. the children of the kingdom; but the tares are  
13.39 the children of the wicked one. The enemy  
that sowed them is the devil; the harvest is  
the end of the world; and the reapers are the  
40 angels. As, therefore, the tares are gathered and  
burned in the fire, so shall it be in the end of this  
41 world. The Son of man shall send forth his angels,  
and they shall gather out of his kingdom all things  
42 that offend, and them which do iniquity; and shall  
cast them in a furnace of fire; there shall be wail-  
43 ing and gnashing of teeth. Then shall the righteous  
shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of their  
Father. Who hath ears to hear, let him hear.

44 Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto treas-  
ure hid in a field; the which when a man hath  
found he hideth, and, for joy thereof, goeth and  
selles all that he hath, and buyeth that field.

45 Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto a  
46 merchant-man, seeking goodly pearls; who, when  
he had found one pearl of great price, went and  
sold all that he had, and bought it.

47 Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto a net,  
that was cast into the sea, and gathered of every  
48 kind; which, when it was full, they drew to shore,  
and sat down, and gathered the good into vessels,  
49 but cast the bad away. So shall it be at the end  
of the world: The angels shall come forth, and sever  
50 the wicked from among the just, and shall cast them  
into the furnace of fire; and there shall be wailing  
51 and gnashing of teeth. Jesus saith unto them,

Have ye understood all these things? They say  
 Mt. unto him, Yea, Lord. Then said he unto them,  
 13.52 Therefore every scribe which is instructed unto the  
 kingdom of heaven is like unto a man that is a  
 householder, which bringeth forth out of his treas-  
 ure things new and old.

53 And it came to pass, that when Jesus had finished  
 these parables, he departed thence.

## CHAPTER XXVII.

*Christ stills the tempest — Met by demoniacs — The  
 swine perish — Returns to his own city.*

Mt. 8.18 AND it came to pass the same day, when Jesus  
 &  
 Mk. 4.35 saw great multitudes about him, and the even was  
 &  
 Lk. 8.22 he said unto them, Let us go over unto the other  
 Lk. 9.57 side of the lake. And, as they went in the way, a  
 certain scribe said unto him, Lord, I will follow  
 58 thee whithersoever thou goest. And Jesus said  
 unto him, Foxes have holes, and birds of the air  
 have nests; but the Son of man hath not where to  
 Mt. 8.21 lay his head. And he said unto another of his disci-  
 Lk. 9.59 ples, Follow me. But he said, Lord, suffer me first  
 60 to go and bury my father. Jesus said unto him,  
 Let the dead bury their dead; but go thou and  
 61 preach the kingdom of God. And another also  
 said, Lord, I will follow thee; but let me first go  
 bid them farewell which are at home at my house.

- Lk.9.62 And Jesus said unto him, No man having put his hand to the plough, and looking back, is fit for the kingdom of God. And, when they had sent away the multitude, they took him even as he was in the ship. And there were also with him other little ships. And there arose a great storm of wind, and the waves beat into the ship, so that it was now full.
- 37 And he was in the hinder part of the ship, asleep on a pillow; and they came unto him and awoke him, saying, Lord, save us! we perish. And he arose, and rebuked the wind; and said unto the sea, Peace, be still; and the wind ceased, and there was a great calm. And he said unto them, Why are ye so fearful? How is it that ye have no faith?
- 40 And they feared exceedingly, and said one to another, What manner of man is this, that even the wind and the sea obey him?
- Mt. 8.28 And when he was come to the other side, into the country of the Gadarenes, there met him two possessed with devils, coming out of the tombs, exceeding fierce, so that no man might pass by that way; *and one of them* had his dwelling among the tombs; and no man could bind him, no, not with chains; because that he had been often bound with fetters and chains, and the chains had been plucked asunder by him, and the fetters broken in pieces; neither could any man tame him. And always, night and day, he was in the mountains, and in the tombs, crying and cutting himself with stones.
- 6 But when he saw Jesus afar off, he ran and wor-



Mk. 5.7 shipped him, and cried with a loud voice, and said,  
What have I do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of the  
most high God? I adjure thee by God, that thou  
Lk.8.29 torment me not. For Jesus had commanded the  
unclean spirit to come out of the man. For often-  
30 times it had caught him. And Jesus asked him,  
saying, What is thy name? And he said, Legion;  
Mk.5.10 because many devils were entered into him. And  
he besought him much, that he would not send  
11 them away out of the country. Now, there was  
there, nigh unto the mountains, a great herd of  
12 swine feeding. And all the devils besought him,  
Mt. 8.31 saying, If thou cast us out, suffer us to go away  
Mk.5.13 into the herd of swine. And forthwith Jesus gave  
them leave. And the unclean spirits went out, and  
entered into the swine; and the herd ran violently  
down a steep place into the sea (they were about  
two thousand), and perished in the waters.

Lk.8.34 When they that fed them saw what was done,  
they fled, and went and told it in the city, and in  
35 the country. Then they went out to see what was  
done; and came to Jesus, and found the man, out  
of whom the devils were departed, sitting at the  
feet of Jesus, clothed, and in his right mind; and  
36 they were afraid. They also which saw it told  
them by what means he that was possessed of the  
Mk.5.16 devils was healed, and also concerning the swine.  
Lk.8.37 Then the whole multitude of the country of the  
Gadarenes, round about, besought him to depart  
Mk.5.17 out of their coasts; for they were taken with great



Mk. 5.18 fear. And, when he was come into the ship, he that had been possessed with the devils prayed him  
 19 that he might be with him. Howbeit, Jesus suffered him not, but saith unto him, Go home to thy friends, and tell them how great things the Lord hath done for thee, and hath had compassion on  
 20 thee. And he departed, and began to publish in Decapolis, how great things Jesus had done for him; and all men did marvel.

21 And when Jesus was passed over again by ship unto the other side, much people gathered unto  
 Lk. 8.40 him, and received him gladly, for they were all  
 Mt. 9.1 waiting for him. And he came into his own city.

## CHAPTER XXVIII.

*The Pharisees complain that he ate with publicans and sinners — The parable of the new and old cloth, and new and old bottles — A woman touches his garment, and is healed — He raises Jairus' daughter.*

Lk. 5.29 AND Levi made him a great feast in his own  
 Mt. 9.10 house. And it came to pass, as Jesus sat at meat in the house, behold, many publicans and sinners came, and sat down with him and his disciples;  
 Mk. 2.15 for there were many, and they followed him. And  
 16 when the scribes and Pharisees saw him eat with publicans and sinners, they said unto his disciples, How is it that he eateth and drinketh with publi-

Mt. 9.12 cans and sinners? But, when Jesus heard that, he said unto them, They that be whole need not a physician, but they that are sick. But go ye and learn what that meaneth, I will have mercy, and not sacrifice;\* for I am not come to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance.

Mk. 2.18 And the disciples of John and of the Pharisees used to fast; and they come, and say unto him, Why do the disciples of John, and of the Pharisees fast, but thy disciples fast not? And Jesus said unto them, Can the children of the bride-chamber fast while the bridegroom is with them? as long as they have the bridegroom with them, they cannot fast. But the days will come, when the bridegroom shall be taken away from them, and

Lk. 5.36 then shall they fast in those days. And he spake a

Mt. 9.16 parable unto them: No man putteth a piece of new cloth unto an old garment; for that which is put in to fill it up taketh from the garment, and the

Lk. 5.37 rent is made worse. And no man putteth new wine into old bottles; else the new wine will burst the bottles, and be spilled, and the bottles shall perish.

38 But new wine must be put into new bottles; and

39 both are preserved. No man also, having drunk old wine, straightway desireth new; for he saith,

Mt. 9.18 The old is better.

Mk. 5.22 And while he spake these things unto them, behold there cometh one of the rulers of the synagogue, Jairus by name; and when he saw Jesus, he fell at his feet. For he had one only

\* Hosea 6 : 6.

Lk. 8.42 daughter, about twelve years of age, and she lay a  
 Mk. 5.23 dying. And *he* besought him greatly, saying, My  
 little daughter lieth at the point of death, *if not*  
 Mt. 9.18 even now dead. I pray thee, come and lay thy  
 Mk. 5.23 hands on her, that she may be healed, and she shall  
 24 live. And Jesus went with him, and so did his  
 Mt. 9.19 disciples; and much people followed him, and  
 Mk. 5.24 thronged him.

25 And a certain woman, which had an issue of  
 26 blood twelve years, and had suffered many things  
 of many physicians, and had spent all that she had,  
 and was nothing bettered, but rather grew worse,  
 27 when she had heard of Jesus, came in the press  
 Mt. 9.20 behind, and touched the hem of his garment;  
 Mk. 5.28 for she said, If I may touch but his clothes, I  
 29 shall be whole. And straightway the fountain of  
 her blood was dried up; and she felt in her body  
 30 that she was healed of that plague. And Jesus,  
 immediately knowing in himself, that virtue had  
 gone out of him, turned him about in the press, and  
 Lk. 8.45 said, Who touched my clothes? When all denied,  
 Peter, and they that were with him, said, Master,  
 the multitude throng thee, and press thee, and say-  
 46 est thou, Who touched me? And Jesus said,  
 Somebody hath touched me; for I perceive that  
 47 virtue is gone out of me. And when the woman  
 saw that she was not hid, she came trembling; and  
 falling down before him, she declared unto him be-  
 fore all the people for what cause she had touched  
 48 him, and how she was healed immediately. And he

said unto her, Daughter, be of good comfort: thy faith hath made the whole; go in peace.

Lk. 8.49 While he yet spake, there cometh one from the ruler of the synagogue's house, saying to him, Thy daughter is dead; trouble not the Master. But, when Jesus heard it, he answered him, saying, Fear not: believe only, and she shall be made whole.

Mt. 9.23 And when he came into the ruler's house, he  
&  
Mk. 5.28 suffered no man to go in save Peter, and James,  
&  
Lk. 8.51 and John, and the father and mother of the maiden.

And he seeth the tumult, the minstrels and the people making a noise, for all wept and bewailed her. And he saith unto them, Give place: why make ye this ado? The damsel is not dead, but sleepeth.

Lk. 8.53 And they laughed him to scorn, knowing that she  
Mk. 5.40 was dead. But when he had put them all out, he taketh the father and the mother of the damsel, and them that were with him, and entereth in where  
41 the damsel was lying. And he took the damsel by the hand, and said unto her, Talitha Cumi; which is, being interpreted, Damsel (I say unto thee),

Lk. 8.55 arise. And her spirit came again. And straight-  
Mk. 5.42 way the damsel arose, and walked; for she was of the age of twelve years; and they were astonished  
43 with a great astonishment. And he charged them straightly that no man should know it; and commanded that something should be given her to eat.

Mt. 9.26 And the fame hereof went abroad into all the land.

## CHAPTER XXIX.

*Restores sight to two blind men — Is rejected in his own country — Empowers the apostles and orders them out to preach — Exhorts them.*

Mt. 9.27    AND when Jesus departed thence, two blind men followed him, crying, and saying, Thou son of David, 28 have mercy on us. And when he was come into the house, the blind men came to him; and Jesus saith unto them, Believe ye that I am able to do 29 this? They said unto him, Yea, Lord. Then touched he their eyes, saying, According to your 30 faith, be it unto you. And their eyes were opened; and Jesus straitly charged them, saying, See that 31 no man know it. But they, when they were departed, spread abroad his fame in all that country. 32 As they went out, behold, they brought to him 33 a dumb man possessed with a devil. And when the devil was cast out, the dumb spake: and the multitudes marvelled, saying, It was never so seen in 34 Israel. But the Pharisees said, He casteth out devils, through the prince of the devils.

Mk. 6.1    And he went out from thence, and came into his 2 own country; and his disciples followed him. And when the Sabbath-day was come, he began to teach in the synagogue; and many hearing him, were astonished, saying, From whence hath this man these things, and what wisdom is this which is given unto him, that even such mighty works are wrought by



Mk 6.3 his hands? Is not this the carpenter, the son of Mary, the brother of James and Joses, and of Judah and Simon? and are not his sisters here with us? And they were offended at him. But Jesus said unto them, A prophet is not without honor, but in his own country, and among his own kin, and Mt. 13.58 in his own house. And he did not many mighty Mk.6.5 works there because of their unbelief, save that he laid his hands upon a few sick folk, and healed Mt. 9.35 them. And Jesus went about all the cities and villages, teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the gospel of the kingdom, and healing every sickness, and every disease among the people.

36 But when he saw the multitudes, he was moved with compassion on them, because they fainted, and were scattered abroad, as sheep having no shepherd. 37 Then saith he unto his disciples, The harvest truly 38 is plenteous, but the laborers are few. Pray ye, therefore, the Lord of the harvest, that he will send forth laborers into his harvest.

Mt. 10.1 And when he had called unto him his twelve disciples, he gave them power against unclean spirits, to cast them out, and to heal all manner of sickness, and all manner of disease. And he sent them Mk. 6.7 forth by two and two, and commanded them, saying, Mt.10.5 Go not into the way of the Gentiles, and into any 6 city of the Samaritans, enter ye not; but go rather 7 to the lost sheep of the house of Israel. And, as ye go, preach, saying, The kingdom of heaven is at 8 hand. Heal the sick, cleanse the lepers, raise the



dead, cast out devils; freely ye have received,  
Mt.10.9 freely give. Provide neither gold, nor silver, nor  
10 brass, in your purses, nor scrip for your journey;  
neither bread, neither two coats, neither shoes,  
Mk. 6.8 nor yet staves, save a staff only, and be shod  
Mt. with sandals; for the workman is worthy of his  
10.11 meat. And into whatsoever city or town ye  
shall enter, inquire who in it is worthy; and  
12 there abide till ye go thence. And when ye come  
13 into a house, salute it. And if the house be worthy,  
let your peace come upon it; but if it be not wor-  
14 thy, let your peace return to you. And whosoever  
shall not receive you, nor hear your words, when ye  
depart out of that house, or city, shake off the dust  
15 of your feet. Verily I say unto you, It shall be  
more tolerable for the land of Sodom and Gomor-  
rah, in the day of judgment, than for that city.  
16 Behold, I send you forth as sheep in the midst of  
wolves; be ye, therefore, wise as serpents, and  
17 harmless as doves. But beware of men: for they  
will deliver you up to the councils, and they will  
18 scourge you in their synagogues; and ye shall be  
brought before governors and kings for my sake,  
for a testimony against them and the Gentiles.  
19 But when they deliver you up, take no thought how  
Lk. or what ye shall speak. The Holy Ghost shall  
12.12 teach you, in the same hour, what ye ought to say;  
Mt. for it is not ye that speak, but the Spirit of your  
10.20 Father which speaketh in you.

## CHAPTER XXX.

*His charge to the apostles.*

Mt. *Fear ye not, therefore, for the brother shall de-*  
 10.21 *liver up the brother to death, and the father the*  
*child; and the children shall rise up against their*  
 22 *parents, and cause them to be put to death. And*  
*ye shall be hated of all men for my name's sake;*  
*but he that endureth to the end shall be saved.*  
 23 *But when they persecute you in this city, flee ye*  
*into another; for, verily I say unto you, Ye shall*  
*not have gone over the cities of Israel, till the Son*  
 24 *of man be come. The disciple is not above his mas-*  
 25 *ter, nor the servant above his lord. It is enough for*  
*the disciple that he be as his master, and the servant*  
*as his lord. If they have called the master of the*  
*house Beelzebub, how much more shall they call them*  
 26 *of his household? But there is nothing covered that*  
*shall not be revealed; neither hid, that shall not be*  
 27 *known. What I tell you in darkness, that speak*  
*ye in the light; and what ye hear in the ear, that*  
*preach ye upon the house-tops. And I say unto*  
 Lk. 12. you, my friends, *Fear not them which kill the body,*  
 4—12 *& and after that have no more that they can do. But*  
 Mt. 10. I will forewarn you whom ye shall fear. *Fear him*  
 23—37 *which is able to destroy both soul and body in hell.*  
*Yea, I say unto you, Fear him.*

Are not five sparrows sold for two farthings? or  
 two sparrows sold for one farthing? And not one

of them is forgotten before God; *nor* shall one of them fall to the ground without your Father. But even the very hairs of your head are all numbered. Fear ye not, therefore, ye are of more value than many sparrows. Also I say unto you, whosoever shall confess me before men, him will I also confess before the angels and my Father which is in heaven. But whosoever shall deny me before men, him will I also deny before the angels and my Father which is in heaven. Suppose ye that I am come to give peace on earth? I tell you nay. I came not to send peace, but rather division and sword; for, from henceforth there shall be five in one house divided: three against two, and two against three. I am come to set a man at variance against his father; and the daughter against her mother, and the daughter-in-law against her mother-in law; and a man's foes shall be they of his own household.

Lk. 12. 51. I am come to send fire on the earth, and what will 49,50 I, if it be already kindled? But I have a baptism to be baptized with; and how am I straitened Mt. until it be accomplished? He that loveth father or 10.37 mother more than me, is not worthy of me; and he that loveth son or daughter more than me, is not 38 worthy of me. And he that taketh not his cross, 39 and followeth after me, is not worthy of me. He that findeth his life shall lose it; and he that loseth his life for my sake shall find it.

40 He that receiveth you, receiveth me; and he that 41 receiveth me, receiveth him that sent me. He that

receiveth a prophet in the name of a prophet, shall receive a prophet's reward; and he that receiveth a righteous man, in the name of a righteous man, shall receive a righteous man's reward. And whosoever shall give to drink unto one of these little ones a cup of cold water only, in the name of a disciple, verily I say unto you, He shall in no wise lose his reward.

## CHAPTER XXXI.

*Sends forth the apostles — John the Baptist slain in prison.*

Mk. 11.1 AND it came to pass, when Jesus had made an end of commanding his twelve disciples, he departed thence, to teach and to preach in their cities.

Mk. 6. 12, 13 And *the apostles* went out, and preached that men should repent. And they went through the towns, &

Lk. 9.6 preaching the gospel and healing everywhere. And they cast out many devils, and anointed with oil many that were sick, and healed them.

Mt. 14. 1—3 At that time Herod the tetrarch, heard of the fame of Jesus (for his name was spread abroad), &

Mk. 6. 14—16 and he said unto his servants, Who is this of whom I hear such things? And some said that Elijah had &

Lk. 9. 7—9 appeared; and others, that one of the old prophets was risen again. But Herod said, It is John the

Baptist, whom I beheaded; he is risen from the dead, and therefore do mighty works show forth

themselves in him; and he desired to see him.

Mk. 6.21 *For* when Herod's birth-day was kept, he made a supper to his lords, high-captains, and chief estates in Galilee. And when the daughter of Herodias came in and danced, and pleased Herod, and them that sat with him, the king said unto the damsel, Ask of me whatsoever thou wilt, and I will give it

23 thee. And he sware unto her, Whatsoever thou shalt ask of me, I will give it thee, unto the half

24 of my kingdom. And she went forth, and said unto her mother, What shall I ask? And she said,

25 The head of John the Baptist. And she came in straightway with haste unto the king, and asked, saying, I will that thou give me, by and by, in a

26 charger, the head of John the Baptist. And the king was exceeding sorry; yet for his oath's sake, and for their sakes which sat with him, he would

27 not reject her. And immediately the king sent an executioner, and commanded his head to be brought;

28 and he went and beheaded him in the prison; and brought his head in a charger, and gave it to the damsel; and the damsel gave it to her mother.

29 And when his disciples heard of it, they came and

Mt. took up his body, and laid it in a tomb, and went

14.12 and told Jesus. And the passover, a feast of the

Jn. 6.4 Jews, was nigh.

## CHAPTER XXXII.

*The apostles return — The five thousand fed — Christ walks on the sea.*

- Mk. 6.30 AND the apostles, when they were returned, gathered themselves together unto Jesus, and told him all things, both what they had done, and what they  
31 had taught. And he said unto them, Come ye yourselves apart into a desert place, and rest a while; for there were many coming and going, and  
32 they had no leisure so much as to eat. And they  
Lk. 9.10 departed by ship privately into a desert place be-  
Mk. 6.33 longing to the city called Bethsaida. And the people saw them departing, and many knew him, and ran afoot thither out of all cities, and outwent them, and came together unto him.
- 34 And Jesus, when he came out, saw much people, and was moved with compassion toward them, because they were as sheep not having a shepherd.
- Lk. 9.11 And he received them, and spake unto them of the kingdom of God, and healed them that had need of  
Mt. 14. healing. And when the day was now far spent, he  
15—21 saith unto Philip, whence shall we buy bread that  
& these may eat? And this he said to prove him, for  
Mk. 6. these may eat? And this he said to prove him, for  
32—44 he himself knew what he would do. His disciples  
& came and said unto him, Send the multitude away,  
Lk. 9 12—17 that they may go into the towns and country round  
& about, and lodge, and get victuals; for we are here  
Jn. 6. 5—14 in a desert place, and they have nothing to eat.



But Jesus said unto them, They need not depart; give ye them to eat. And they say unto him, Shall we go and buy two hundred penny-worth of bread and give them to eat, that every one of them may take a little? He saith, How many loaves have ye? go and see. One of his disciples, Andrew, Simon Peter's brother, saith unto him, There is a lad here which hath five barley loaves, and two small fishes: but what are they among so many? And he said, Bring them hither to me. And he commanded them to make all sit down by companies upon the green grass (now there was much grass in the place), and they sat down in ranks by hundreds and by fifties. And when he had taken the five loaves and the two fishes, he looked up to heaven and blessed them; and, when he had given thanks, he brake the loaves and gave them to his disciples to set before the multitude. And the two fishes divided he among them all. And they did all eat, and were filled. *And* he said unto his disciples, Gather up the fragments that remain, that nothing be lost. Therefore they gathered them together, and filled twelve baskets full with the fragments of the five barley loaves, and of the fishes, which remained over and above unto them that had eaten. And they that had eaten were about five thousand men, beside women and children. Then those men, when they had seen the miracle that Jesus did, said, This is, of a truth, that prophet that should come into the world.

Mt.14. *And* when Jesus, therefore, perceived that they  
 22—36 & would come and take him by force, and make him a  
 Mk.6. king, straightway he constrained his disciples to get  
 45—56 Jn.6. into the ship and to go before him, over the sea to-  
 15—21 ward Capernaum, unto Bethsaida, *on* the other side,  
 while he sent the multitude away.

And when he had sent them away, he departed again into a mountain himself alone to pray. And when the even was come, the ship was now in the midst of the sea, tossed with the waves; for the sea arose by reason of a great wind that blew. And it was now dark, and Jesus was not come unto them.

So when they had rowed about five-and-twenty or thirty furlongs, he saw them toiling and rowing, for the wind was contrary unto them. And about the fourth watch of the night, he cometh unto them, walking upon the sea, and would have passed by them. And when the disciples saw him walking on the sea, they were troubled, saying, It is a spirit; and they cried out for fear. But straightway Jesus spake unto them, saying, Be of good cheer: it is I; be not afraid; for they all saw him, and they considered not the miracle of the loaves, for their heart was hardened. And Peter answered him and said, Lord, if it be thou, bid me come unto thee on the water. And he said, Come. And when Peter was come down out of the ship, he walked on the water to go to Jesus. But when he saw the wind boisterous, he was afraid; and, beginning to sink, he cried, saying, Lord, save me. And imme-

diately Jesus stretched forth his hand, and caught him, and said unto him, O thou of little faith! wherefore didst thou doubt? And when they were come, they willingly received him into the ship; and the wind ceased. Then they that were in the ship were sore amazed in themselves beyond measure, and came and worshipped him, saying, Of a truth, thou art the Son of God; and immediately the ship was at the land whither they went.

And they came into the land of Gennesaret, and drew to the shore. And, when they were come out of the ship, straightway they knew him, and ran through that whole region round about, and began to carry about in beds those that were sick, where they heard he was. And whithersoever he entered, into villages, or cities, or country, they laid the sick in the streets, and besought him that they might touch, if it were but the border of his garment; and as many as touched him were made whole.

---

## CHAPTER XXXII.

*Christ teaches the people — Explains his relation with the Father — Shows that he is the bread of God which came down from heaven.*

**Jn.6.22** THE day following, when the people, which stood on the other side of the sea, saw that there was none other boat there, save that one whereinto his disciples were entered, and that Jesus went not

with his disciples into the boat, but that his disciples were gone away alone (howbeit there came other boats from Tiberias, nigh unto the place where they did eat bread, after that the Lord had given thanks) ; when the people, therefore, saw that Jesus was not there, neither his disciples, they also took shipping, and came to Capernaum, seeking for Jesus. And, when they had found him on the other side of the sea, they said unto him, Rabbi, when camest thou hither ? Jesus answered them, and said, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Ye seek me, not because ye saw the miracles, but because ye did eat of the loaves, and were filled. Labor not for the meat which perisheth, but for that meat which endureth unto everlasting life, which the Son of man shall give unto you ; for him hath God the Father sealed. Then said they unto him, What shall we do, that we might work the works of God ? Jesus answered and said unto them, This is the work of God, that ye believe on him whom he hath sent.

They said, therefore, unto him, What sign shonest thou, then, that we may see, and believe thee ? What dost thou work ? Our fathers did eat manna in the desert ; \* as it is written, He gave them bread from heaven to eat.† Then Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Moses gave you not that bread from heaven ; but my Father giveth you the true bread from heaven. For the bread of God

\* Ex. 16 : 4—12.

† Neh. 9 : 15 ; Ps. 78 : 24, 25 ; 105 : 40.

is he which cometh down from heaven, and giveth  
Jn. 6. 34 life unto the world. Then said they unto him,  
35 Lord, evermore give us this bread. And Jesus said  
unto them, I am the bread of life; he that cometh  
to me shall never hunger; and he that believeth on  
36 me shall never thirst. But I said unto you, that  
37 ye also have seen me, and believe not. All that the  
Father giveth me shall come to me; and him that  
38 cometh to me, I will in no wise cast out. For I  
came down from heaven, not to do mine own will,  
39 but the will of him that sent me. And this is the  
Father's will which hath sent me, that of all which  
he hath given me I should lose nothing, but should  
40 raise it up again at the last day. And this is the  
will of him that sent me, that every one which  
seeth the Son, and believeth on him, may have ever-  
lasting life; and I will raise him up at the last day.  
41 The Jews then murmured at him, because he said I  
am the bread which came down from heaven.  
42 And they said, Is not this Jesus, the Son of Joseph,  
whose father and mother we know? how is it, then,  
43 that he saith, I came down from heaven? Jesus,  
therefore, answered and said unto them, Murmur  
44 not among yourselves. No man can come to me,  
except the Father, which hath sent me, draw him;  
45 and I will raise him up at the last day. It is writ-  
ten in the prophets, And they shall be all taught of  
God.\* Every man, therefore, that hath heard, and  
46 hath learned of the Father, cometh unto me. Not

\* Is. 54: 13; Jer. 31: 33, 34.



that any man hath seen the Father, save he which  
Jn.6.47 is of God, he hath seen the Father. Verily, verily,  
I say unto you, He that believeth on me hath ever-  
48,49 lasting life. I am that bread of life. Your fathers  
did eat manna in the wilderness, and are dead.\*  
50 This is the bread which cometh down from heaven,  
51 that a man may eat thereof, and not die. I am the  
living bread which came down from heaven; if any  
man eat of this bread he shall live forever; and the  
bread that I will give is my flesh, which I will give  
52 for the life of the world. The Jews, therefore,  
strove among themselves, saying, How can this man  
53 give us his flesh to eat? Then Jesus said unto  
them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Except ye eat  
the flesh of the Son of man, and drink his blood, ye  
54 have no life in you. Whoso eateth my flesh, and  
drinketh my blood, hath eternal life; and I will  
55 raise him up at the last day. For my flesh is meat  
56 indeed, and my blood is drink indeed. He that  
eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, dwelleth in  
57 me, and I in him. As the living Father hath sent  
me, and I live by the Father; so he that eateth  
58 me, even he shall live by me. This is that bread  
which came down from heaven: not as your fathers  
did eat manna, and are dead: he that eateth of  
59 this bread shall live forever. These things said he  
in the synagogue, as he taught in Capernaum.  
60 Many, therefore, of his disciples, when they had  
heard this, said, This is a hard saying, who can hear

\* Numb. 11: 8.



Jn.6.61 it? When Jesus knew in himself that his disciples murmured at it, he said unto them, Doth this  
62 offend you? What and if ye shall see the Son of  
63 man ascend up where he was before? It is the Spirit that quickeneth: the flesh profiteth nothing; the words that I speak unto you, they are spirit,  
64 and they are life. But there are some of you that believe not. For Jesus knew from the beginning who they were that believed not, and who should  
65 betray him. And he said, Therefore said I unto you, that no man can come unto me, except it were given unto him of my Father.

---

## CHAPTER XXXIV.

*The Pharisees complain that the disciples eat with unwashed hands — Christ explains what defiles the man.\**

Jn.6.56 FROM that time many of his disciples went back,  
67 and walked no more with him. Then said Jesus  
68 unto the twelve, Will ye, also, go away? Then Simon Peter answered him, Lord, to whom shall  
69 we go? thou hast the words of eternal life. And we believe and are sure that thou art that Christ,  
70 the Son of the living God. Jesus answered them, Have not I chosen you twelve, and one of you is a

\* About this time Jesus went up to Jerusalem, and attended the third passover after his baptism; but returned immediately to Galilee.

Jn. 6.71 devil? He spake of Judas Iscariot, the son of Simon; for he it was that should betray him, being one of the twelve.

Jn. 7.1 After these things, Jesus walked in Galilee: for he would not walk in Jewry, because the Jews sought Mk. 7.1 to kill him. Then came together unto him the Pharisees, and certain of the scribes, which came from 2 Jerusalem. And when they saw some of his disciples eat bread with defiled, that is to say, with 3 unwashen hands, they found fault. For the Pharisees, and all the Jews, except they wash their hands oft, eat not, holding the tradition of the 4 elders. And when they come from the market, except they wash, they eat not. And many other things there be, which they have received to hold, as the washing of cups, and pots, and brazen vessels, and tables. Then the Pharisees and scribes 5 asked him, Why walk not thy disciples according to the tradition of the elders, but eat bread with un- 6 washen hands? He answered and said unto them, Well hath Isaiah prophesied of you, hypocrites, as Mt. 15.8 it is written,\* This people draweth nigh unto me Mk. 7.6 with their mouth, and honoreth me with their lips, 7 but their heart is far from me. Howbeit, in vain do they worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men. For, laying aside the commandment of God, ye hold the tradition of men, as the washing of pots and cups: and many other such

\* Is. 29: 13.

Mt.15.<sup>3-15</sup> like things ye do. Why do ye, *therefore*, trans-  
 & gress the commandment of God by your tradition?  
 Mk.7.<sup>11,12</sup> For God commanded, saying, Honor thy father and  
 mother; \* and he that curseth father or mother, let  
 him die the death. But ye say, Whosoever shall  
 say to his father or his mother, It is Corban, that  
 is to say, a gift, by whatsoever thou mightest be  
 profited by me; and honor not his father or his  
 mother, he shall be free; and ye suffer him no  
 more to do aught for his father or his mother.  
 Thus have ye made the commandment of God of  
 none effect by your tradition.

Mt.<sup>15.10</sup> And he called the multitude, and said unto them,  
 Hear, and understand: not that which goeth into  
 11 the mouth defileth a man; but that which cometh  
 Mk.7.<sup>16</sup> out of the mouth, this defileth a man. If any man  
 Mt.<sup>15.12</sup> have ears to hear, let him hear. Then came his  
 disciples, and said unto him, Knowest thou that the  
 Pharisees were offended, after they heard this say-  
 13 ing? But he answered, and said, Every plant,  
 which my heavenly Father hath not planted, shall  
 14 be rooted up. Let them alone; they be blind lead-  
 ers of the blind. And if the blind lead the blind,  
 both shall fall into the ditch.

Mk.7.<sup>17</sup> And, when he was entered into the house from  
 the people, his disciples asked him concerning the  
 18 parable. And he said unto them, Are ye also yet  
 without understanding? Do ye not perceive, that  
 whatsoever thing from without entereth into the

\* Ex. 20: 12; 21: 17.

Mk.7.19 man, it cannot defile him; because it entereth not into his heart, but into the belly, and goeth out into the draught, purging all meats? But those things which proceed out of the mouth come forth from the heart; and they defile the man. For, from within, out of the heart of men, proceed evil thoughts, adulteries, fornications, murders, thefts, covetousness, wickedness, deceit, lasciviousness, an evil eye, blasphemy, pride, foolishness; all these evil things come from within, and defile the man. But to eat with unwashen hands, defileth not the man.

## CHAPTER XXXV.

*The Syrophenician woman's daughter healed — The deaf and dumb man healed — The seventy sent out — The four thousand fed.*

Mk.7.24 AND from thence he arose, and went into the borders of Tyre and Sidon, and entered into a house, and would have no man know it; but he could not be hid. For a certain woman of Canaan, whose young daughter had an unclean spirit, heard of him, and she cried unto him, saying, Have mercy on me, O Lord, thou son of David; my daughter is grievously vexed with a devil. But he answered her not a word. And his disciples came and besought him, saying, Send her away; for she crieth after us. But he answered and said, I am not sent but unto the lost sheep of the house of Israel.

Mt. 15. Then came she and fell at his feet (the woman  
 25—28 & was a Greek, a Syrophenician by nation), and wor-  
 Mk. 7. shipped him, saying, Lord, help me. But he an-  
 24—30 swered and said, Let the children first be filled; it  
 is not meet to take the children's bread, and to cast  
 it to dogs. And she said, Truth, Lord; yet the  
 dogs eat of the children's crumbs which fall from  
 their master's table. Then Jesus answered and  
 said unto her, O woman, great is thy faith! go thy  
 way; be it unto thee even as thou wilt; the devil  
 is gone out of thy daughter. And when she was  
 come to her house, she found it even so. And her  
 daughter was made whole from that very hour.

Mk. 7.31 And again, departing from the coasts of Tyre  
 and Sidon, he came unto the sea of Galilee, through  
 Mt. the midst of the coasts of Decapolis. And he went  
 15.29 up into a mountain and sat down there. And they  
 Mk. 7.32 bring unto him one that was deaf, and had an im-  
 pediment in his speech; and they beseech him to  
 33 put his hand upon him. And he took him aside  
 from the multitude, and put his fingers into his  
 34 ears, and he spit, and touched his tongue; and,  
 looking up to heaven, he sighed, and saith unto  
 35 him, Ephphatha, that is, Be opened. And straight-  
 way his ears were opened, and the string of his  
 36 tongue was loosed, and he spake plain. And he  
 charged them that they should tell no man; but  
 the more he charged them, so much the more a  
 37 great deal they published it; and were beyond  
 measure astonished, saying, He hath done all things

well ; he maketh both the deaf to hear, and the  
Mt. dumb to speak. And great multitudes came unto  
15.30 him, having with them those that were lame, blind,  
dumb, maimed, and many others, and cast them  
31 down at Jesus' feet, and he healed them ; insomuch  
that the multitude wondered, when they saw the  
dumb to speak, the maimed to be whole, the lame  
to walk, and the blind to see ; and they glorified  
the God of Israel.

Lk. 10.1 After these things, the Lord appointed other  
seventy also, and sent them two and two before his  
face into every city and place, whither he himself  
2 would come. Therefore said he unto them, The  
harvest truly is great, but the laborers are few ;  
pray ye, therefore, the Lord of the harvest, that he  
3 would send forth laborers into his harvest. Go  
your ways : behold, I send you forth as lambs  
4 among wolves. Carry neither purse, nor scrip, nor  
5 shoes : and salute no man by the way. And into  
whatsoever house ye enter, first say, Peace be to  
6 this house. And if the son of peace be there, your  
peace shall rest upon it : if not, it shall turn to you  
7 again. And in the same house remain, eating and  
drinking such things as they give ; for the laborer  
is worthy of his hire. Go not from house to house.  
8 And into whatsoever city ye enter, and they receive  
9 you, eat such things as are set before you ; and  
heal the sick that are therein, and say unto them,  
10 The kingdom of God is come nigh unto you. But  
into whatsoever city ye enter, and they receive you



not, go your ways out into the streets of the same,  
 Lk.10.11 and say, Even the very dust of your city, which  
 cleaveth on us, we do wipe off against you; not-  
 withstanding, be ye sure of this, that the kingdom  
 12 of God is come nigh unto you. But I say unto  
 you, That it shall be more tolerable in that day for  
 16 Sodom than for that city. He that heareth you,  
 heareth me; and he that despiseth you, despiseth  
 me; and he that despiseth me, despiseth him that  
 sent me.

Mk.8.1 In those days the multitude being very great, and  
 &  
 Mt. 15. having nothing to eat, Jesus called his disciples  
 34—38 unto him, and saith unto them, I have compassion  
 2 on the multitude, because they have now been with  
 3 me three days, and have nothing to eat; and if I  
 send them away fasting to their own houses, they  
 will faint by the way: for divers of them came from  
 4 far. And his disciples answered him, From whence  
 can a man satisfy these men with bread here in  
 5 the wilderness? And he asked them, How many  
 loaves have ye? And they said, Seven, and a few  
 6 little fishes. And he commanded the people to sit  
 down on the ground; and he took the seven loaves,  
 and the fishes, and gave thanks, and brake, and  
 gave to his disciples to set before them; and they  
 8 did set them before the people. So they did all  
 eat, and were filled; and they took up of the broken  
 9 meat that was left, seven baskets full. And they  
 that had eaten, were about four thousand men, be-

Mt. side women and children. And he sent away the  
 15.39 multitude, and took ship, and came into the coasts  
 of Magdala *and* Dalmanutha.

---

## CHAPTER XXXVI.

*The Pharisees ask a sign — The disciples forget to take bread — A blind man receives his sight — Christ inquires who men say he is — Reproves Peter.*

Mt. 16.1 THE Pharisees also with the Sadducees came, and, tempting, desired him that he would show them a  
 2 sign from heaven. He answered and said unto them, When it is evening, ye say, It will be fair  
 3 weather; for the sky is red. And in the morning, It will be foul weather to-day; for the sky is red and lowering. O ye hypocrites! ye can discern the face of the sky; but can ye not discern the  
 Mk.8.12 signs of the times? And he sighed deeply in his & spirit, and saith, Why doth this wicked and adul-  
 Mt.18.4 terous generation seek after a sign? Verily I say unto you, There shall no sign be given unto this  
 Mk.8.13 generation, but the sign of the prophet Jonah. And he left them, and, entering into the ship again, departed to the other side.

14 Now the disciples had forgotten to take bread, neither had they in the ship with them more than  
 15 one loaf. And he charged them, saying, Take heed, beware of the leaven of the Pharisees, and of the

- Mk.8.16 Sadducees, and of the leaven of Herod. And they reasoned among themselves, saying, It is because  
17 we have no bread. And, when Jesus knew it, he saith unto them, Why reason ye because ye have no bread? Perceive ye not yet, neither understand?  
18 Have ye your heart yet hardened? Having eyes, see ye not? and having ears, hear ye not? and do  
19 ye not remember? When I brake the five loaves among five thousand, how many baskets full of fragments took ye up? They say unto him, Twelve.  
20 And when the seven among four thousand, how many baskets full of fragments took ye up? And  
21 they said, Seven. And he said unto them, How is  
Mt. it that ye do not understand that I spake it not to  
16.11 you concerning bread, that ye should beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees?  
12 Then understood they how that he bade them not beware of the leaven of bread, but of the doctrine of the Pharisees, and of the Sadducees.
- Mk.8.22 And he cometh to Bethsaida; and they bring a blind man unto him, and besought him to touch  
23 him. And he took the blind man by the hand, and led him out of the town; and, when he had spit on his eyes, and put his hands upon him, he asked him  
24 if he saw aught. And he looked up and said, I see  
25 men as trees walking. After that, he put his hands again upon his eyes, and made him look up; and  
26 he was restored, and saw every man clearly. And he sent him away to his house, saying, Neither go into the town, nor tell it to any in the town.

Mt. 16.13 And Jesus went out into the towns of Cesarea  
& Philippi; and by the way, he being alone praying  
Mk.8.27 (his disciples *only being* with him), he asked them,  
&  
Lk. 9.18 saying, Whom do men say that I, the Son of man,  
Mt. am? And they said, Some say that thou art John  
16.14 the Baptist; some, Elijah, and others, Jeremiah,  
15 or one of the prophets. He saith unto them, But  
16 whom say ye that I am? And Simon Peter answered  
and said, Thou art the Christ, the Son of the  
17 living God. And Jesus answered and said unto  
him, Blessed art thou, Simon Barjona; for flesh  
and blood hath not revealed it unto thee, but my  
18 Father which is in heaven. And I say also unto  
thee, That thou art Peter, and upon this rock I  
will build my church; and the gates of hell shall  
19 not prevail against it. And I will give unto thee  
the keys of the kingdom of heaven; and whatsoever  
thou shalt bind on earth, shall be bound in  
heaven; and whatsoever thou shalt loose on earth,  
20 shall be loosed in heaven. Then charged he his  
disciples that they should tell no man that he was  
Jesus the Christ.  
21 From that time forth began Jesus to show unto  
his disciples, how that he must go unto Jerusalem,  
and suffer many things of the elders, and chief  
priests, and scribes, and be killed, and be raised  
22 again the third day. Then Peter took him, and  
began to rebuke him, saying, Be it far from thee,  
23 Lord: this shall not be unto thee. But he turned  
and said unto Peter, Get thee behind me, Satan:

thou art an offence unto me ; for thou savorest not the things that be of God, but those that be of men.

Mk.8.34 And when he had called the people unto him  
 Lk.9.23 with his disciples, he said to them all, If any man  
 will come after me, let him deny himself, and take  
 35 up his cross daily, and follow me. For whosoever  
 will save his life, shall lose it ; but whosoever shall  
 lose his life, for my sake and the gospel's, the same  
 36 shall save it. For, what shall it profit a man, if he  
 should gain the whole world, and lose his own soul ?  
 37 Or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul ?  
 Mt. For the Son of man shall come in the glory of his  
 16.27 Father, with his angels ; and then he shall reward  
 Mk.8.38 every man according to his works. Whosoever,  
 therefore, shall be ashamed of me, and of my words,  
 in this adulterous and sinful generation, of him,  
 also, shall the Son of man be ashamed, when he  
 cometh in the glory of his Father, with the holy  
 Mk.9.1 angels. And he said unto them, Verily I say unto  
 you, That there be some of them that stand here,  
 which shall not taste of death, till they have seen  
 the kingdom of God come with power.

---

## CHAPTER XXXVII.

*Christ transfigured—Casts an evil spirit out of a man's son.*

Mt.17. AND it came to pass about six days after these  
 1-3 sayings, Jesus took Peter, and John, and James,



- Mk.9. and went up into an high mountain apart by them-  
 2—4 & selves, to pray. And as he prayed, he was trans-  
 Lk.9. figured before them. The fashion of his counte-  
 23—31 nance was altered; his face did shine as the sun,  
 and his raiment became shining, exceeding white as  
 snow, so as no fuller on earth can white them. And  
 behold, there appeared in glory, Moses and Elijah  
 talking with Jesus. And they spake of his decease  
 Lk. 9.32 which he should accomplish at Jerusalem. But  
 Peter, and they that were with him, were heavy  
 with sleep; and when they were awake, they saw  
 his glory, and the two men that stood with him.  
 33 And it came to pass, as they departed from him,  
 Peter said unto Jesus, Master, it is good for us to  
 be here; and let us make three tabernacles; one  
 for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elijah: not  
 34 knowing what he said. While he thus spake, there  
 Mt.17.5 came a cloud, and overshadowed them; and, behold,  
 a voice out of the cloud, which said, This is my  
 beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased; hear ye  
 6 him. And when the disciples heard it, they fell on  
 7 their face, and were sore afraid. And Jesus came  
 and touched them, and said, Arise, and be not  
 8 afraid. And when they had lifted up their eyes,  
 Mk.9.9 they saw no man, save Jesus only. And, as they  
 came down from the mountain, he charged them  
 that they should tell no man what things they had  
 seen, till the Son of man were risen from the dead.  
 10 And they kept that saying with themselves, ques-  
 tioning one with another what the rising from the



Mt. dead should mean. And his disciples asked him,  
 17.10 saying, Why, then, say the scribes that Elijah must  
 11 first come? And Jesus answered and said unto  
 them, Elijah truly shall first come, and restore all  
 12 things. But I say unto you, that Elijah is come  
 already, and they knew him not, but have done  
 unto him whatsoever they listed. Likewise shall  
 13 also the Son of man suffer of them. Then the dis-  
 ciples understood that he spake unto them of John  
 the Baptist.

Mt.17. And it came to pass, that on the next day, when  
 14—21 & they were come down from the hill, he came to his  
 Mk.9. disciples, and saw a great multitude about them, and  
 14—29 & the scribes questioning with them. And straight-  
 Lk.9. way all the people, when they beheld him, were  
 37—43 greatly amazed, and, running to him, saluted him.  
 And he asked the scribes, What question ye with  
 them? And behold, there came to him a certain  
 man, kneeling down to him, and saying, Lord, I  
 beseech thee, look upon my son, for he is mine only  
 child. And, lo, a spirit taketh him, and he sud-  
 denly crieth out; and it teareth him that he foam-  
 eth again, and, bruising him, hardly departeth  
 from him. And I besought thy disciples to cast  
 him out; and they could not. And Jesus answer-  
 ing, said, O faithless and perverse generation!  
 Mk.9.19 how long shall I be with you? how long shall I  
 20 suffer you? Bring him unto me. And they brought  
 him unto him; and when he saw him, straightway  
 the spirit tare him; and he fell on the ground, and

21 wallowed, foaming. And he asked his father, How  
long is it ago since this came unto him? And he  
22 said, Of a child. And oftentimes it hath cast him  
into the fire, and into the waters, to destroy him;  
but if thou canst do anything, have compassion on  
23 us, and help us. Jesus said unto him, If thou canst  
believe, all things are possible to him that believeth.  
24 And straightway the father of the child cried out,  
and said with tears, Lord, I believe; help thou mine  
25 unbelief. When Jesus saw that the people came  
running together, he rebuked the foul spirit, saying  
unto him, Thou dumb and deaf spirit, I charge  
thee, come out of him, and enter no more into him.  
26 And the spirit cried and rent him sore, and came  
out of him; and he was as one dead; insomuch  
27 that many said, He is dead. But Jesus took him  
by the hand and lifted him up; and he arose, and  
Lk.9.43 was cured from that very hour; and he delivered  
him again to his father. And they were all amazed  
at the mighty power of God.

Mk.9.28 And when he was come into the house, his disci-  
ples asked him privately, Why could not we cast  
Mt. him out? And Jesus said unto them, Because of  
17.20 your unbelief; for, verily I say unto you, If ye  
have faith, as a grain of mustard-seed, ye shall say  
unto this mountain, Remove hence to yonder place,  
and it shall remove; and nothing shall be impossible  
21 unto you. Howbeit, this kind goeth not out but by  
prayer and fasting.

Lk.9. And they departed thence, and passed through  
 43—45 Galilee; and he would not that any man should  
 & know it. And he taught his disciples, *saying*, Let  
 Mt. 17. these sayings sink down into your ears: The Son  
 22,23 of man shall be betrayed into the hands of men;  
 & Mk. 9. and they shall kill him, and the third day he shall  
 30,32 be raised again. And they were exceeding sorry.  
 But they understood not that saying, and were  
 afraid to ask him.

---

## CHAPTER XXXVIII.

*Tribute-money found in the fish's mouth — The disciples taught humility, and warned against offences.*

Mt. AND when they were come to Capernaum, they  
 17.24 that received tribute-money came to Peter, and  
 25 said, Doth not your Master pay tribute? He saith,  
 Yes. And when he was come into the house, Jesus  
 prevented him, saying, What thinkest thou, Simon?  
 Of whom do the kings of the earth take custom or  
 tribute? of their own children, or of strangers?  
 26 Peter saith unto him, Of strangers. Jesus saith  
 27 unto him, Then are the children free. Notwith-  
 standing, lest we should offend them, go thou to the  
 sea, and cast a hook, and take up the fish that first  
 cometh up, and, when thou hast opened his mouth,  
 thou shalt find a piece of money; that take, and  
 give unto them for me and thee.

- Mt.18.1 At the same time came the disciples unto Jesus, saying, Who is the greatest in the kingdom of  
Mk.9.33 heaven? But he asked them, What was it that ye  
34 disputed among yourselves by the way? But they held their peace; for by the way they had disputed among themselves, who should be the greatest.  
35 And he sat down, and called the twelve, and saith unto them, If any man desire to be first, the same  
36 shall be last of all, and servant of all. And he took a child, and set him in the midst of them; and, when he had taken him in his arms, he said,  
Mt.18.3 Verily I say unto you, Except ye be converted, and become as little children, ye shall not enter into the  
4 kingdom of heaven. Whosoever, therefore, shall humble himself as this little child, the same is  
5 greatest in the kingdom of heaven. And whoso shall receive one such little child in my name, re-  
Lk.9.48 ceiveth me. Therefore, he that is least among you all, the same shall be great.
- Mk.9.38 And John answered him, saying, Master, we saw one casting out devils in thy name, and he followed not us; and we forbade him, because he followeth  
39 not us. But Jesus said, Forbid him not: for there is no man which shall do a miracle in my name, that  
40 can lightly speak evil of me. For he that is not  
Mt. against us is on our part. Take heed that ye  
18.10 despise not one of these little ones; for I say unto you, That in heaven their angels do always behold  
11 the face of my Father which is in heaven. For the Son of man is come to save that which was lost.

- Mt. How think ye? if a man have a hundred sheep,  
 18.12 and one of them be gone astray, doth he not leave  
 the ninety and nine, and goeth into the mountains,  
 13 and seeketh that which is gone astray? And if so  
 be that he find it, verily I say unto you, he rejoic-  
 eth more of that sheep, than of the ninety and nine  
 14 which went not astray. Even so it is not the will  
 of your Father which is in heaven that one of  
 6 these little ones should perish. And whoso shall  
 offend one of these little ones which believe in me,  
 it were better for him that a millstone were hanged  
 about his neck, and that he were drowned in the  
 depth of the sea.
- 7 Woe unto the world because of offences! for it  
 must needs be that offences come; but woe to that  
 8 man by whom the offence cometh! Wherefore, if  
 thy hand or thy foot offend thee, cut them off, and  
 cast them from thee; it is better for thee to enter  
 into life halt or maimed, rather than having two  
 hands, or two feet, to be cast into everlasting fire;  
 Mk.9.14 where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not  
 47 quenched. And if thine eye offend thee, pluck it  
 out, and cast it from thee; it is better for thee to  
 enter into the kingdom of God with one eye, than  
 48 having two eyes to be cast into hell fire; where  
 their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched.  
 49 For every one shall be salted with fire, and every  
 50 sacrifice shall be salted with salt. Salt is good, but  
 & if the salt have lost his saltness, wherewith will yo  
 Lk.  
 14.35. season it? It is neither fit for the land, nor yet



for the dunghill; but men cast it out. Have salt in yourselves, and have peace one with another. He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.

---

## CHAPTER XXXIX.

*The seventy return and report — Christ denounces the wicked cities — Invites all to come to him — Instructs the disciples as to offences and forgiveness.*

Lk. AND the seventy returned again with joy, saying,  
10.17 Lord, even the devils are subject unto us through  
18 thy name. And he said unto them, I beheld Satan  
19 as lightning fall from heaven. Behold, I give unto  
you power to tread on serpents and scorpions, and  
over all the power of the enemy; and nothing shall  
20 by any means hurt you. Notwithstanding, in this  
rejoice not, that the spirits are subject unto you;  
but rather rejoice, because your names are written  
in heaven.

Mt. Then began he to upbraid the cities wherein most  
11.20 of his mighty works were done, because they re-  
21 pent not: Woe unto thee, Chorazin! woe unto  
thee, Bethsaida; for if the mighty works which  
were done in you, had been done in Tyre and Sidon,  
they would have repented long ago in sackcloth and  
22 ashes. But I say unto you, It shall be more tol-  
erable for Tyre and Sidon, at the day of judgment,  
23 than for you. And thou, Capernaum, which art  
exalted unto heaven, shalt be brought down to hell;



for if the mighty works which have been done in thee had been done in Sodom, it would have remained until this day. But I say unto you, That  
Mt. 11.24 it shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom, in the day of judgment, than for thee.

25 At that time, Jesus rejoiced in spirit, and said,  
Lk. 10.21 I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, because thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and hast revealed them unto babes.  
Mt. 11.26 Even so, Father: for so it seemed good in thy  
27 sight. All things are delivered unto me of my Father; and no man knoweth the Son, but the Father; neither knoweth any man the Father, save the Son, and he to whomsoever the Son will reveal him.

28 Come unto me, all ye that labor and are heavy  
29 laden, and I will give you rest. Take my yoke upon you, and learn of me; for I am meek and lowly in heart: and ye shall find rest unto your  
30 souls. For my yoke is easy, and my burden is  
Mt. 18.15 light. Moreover, *Jesus said unto his disciples*, If thy brother shall trespass against thee, go and tell him his fault between thee and him alone; if he  
16 shall hear thee, thou hast gained thy brother. But if he will not hear thee, then take with thee one or two more, that in the mouth of two or three wit-  
17 nesses every word may be established. And if he shall neglect to hear them, tell it unto the church; but if he neglect to hear the church, let him be unto  
18 thee as a heathen man and a publican. Verily I

say unto you, Whatsoever ye shall bind on earth, shall be bound in heaven; and whatsoever ye shall loose on earth, shall be loosed in heaven. Again I  
Mt. 18.19 say unto you, That if two of you shall agree on earth as touching anything that they shall ask, it shall be done for them of my Father which is in  
20 heaven. For where two or three are gathered together in my name, there am I in the midst of them.

21 Then came Peter to him, and said, Lord, how oft shall my brother sin against me, and I forgive him?  
22 till seven times? Jesus saith unto him, Take heed to yourselves; I say not unto thee, Until seven  
Lk.17.4 times; but, Until seventy times seven. And if thy brother trespass against thee seven times in a day, and seven times in a day turn again to thee, saying,  
5 I repent, thou shalt forgive him. And the apostles  
6 said unto the Lord, Increase our faith. And the Lord said, If ye had faith as a grain of mustard-seed, ye might say unto this sycamine-tree, Be  
7 thou plucked up by the root, and be thou planted in the sea; and it should obey you. But which of  
8 you having a servant ploughing or feeding cattle, will say unto him by and by, when he is come from  
9 the field, Go and sit down to meat? And will not rather say unto him, Make ready wherewith I may sup, and gird thyself, and serve me, till I have eaten and drunken; and afterward thou shalt eat  
and drink. Doth he thank that servant because he did the things that were commanded him? I trow

Lk.17.10 not. So likewise ye, when ye shall have done all those things which are commanded you, say, We are unprofitable servants; we have done that which was our duty to do.

## CHAPTER XL.

*The servant forgiven who owed ten thousand talents — Jesus goes up to the feast of Tabernacles — On their way the apostles ask to command fire from heaven — Ten lepers cleansed.*

Mt. THEREFORE is the kingdom of heaven likened unto  
 18.23 a certain king, which would take account of his ser-  
 24 vants. And when he had begun to reckon, one was  
 brought unto him, which owed him ten thousand  
 25 talents. But, forasmuch as he had not to pay, his  
 lord commanded him to be sold, and his wife and  
 children, and all that he had, and payment to be  
 26 made. The servant, therefore, fell down, and wor-  
 shipped him, saying, Lord, have patience with me,  
 27 and I will pay thee all. Then the lord of that ser-  
 vant was moved with compassion, and loosed him,  
 28 and forgave him the debt. But the same servant  
 went out, and found one of his fellow-servants,  
 which owed him a hundred pence; and he laid  
 hands on him, and took him by the throat, saying,  
 29 Pay me that thou owest. And his fellow-servant  
 fell down at his feet, and besought him, saying,  
 Have patience with me, and I will pay thee all.

Mt.18.30 And he would not; but went and cast him into  
31 prison, till he should pay the debt. So when his  
fellow-servants saw what was done, they were very  
sorry, and came and told unto their lord all that  
32 was done. Then his lord, after that he had called  
him, said unto him, O thou wicked servant! I for-  
gave thee all that debt, because thou desiredst me;  
33 shouldst not thou, also, have had compassion on thy  
34 fellow-servant, even as I had pity on thee? And  
his lord was wroth, and delivered him to the tor-  
mentors, till he should pay all that was due unto  
35 him. So, likewise, shall my heavenly Father do  
also unto you, if ye from your hearts forgive not  
every one his brother their trespasses.

Jn.7.2 Now the Jews' feast of tabernacles was at  
3 hand. His brethren, therefore, said unto him, De-  
part hence, and go into Judea, that thy disciples  
4 also may see the works that thou doest. For there  
is no man that doeth anything in secret, and he  
himself seeketh to be known openly. If thou do  
5 these things, show thyself to the world. For neither  
6 did his brethren believe in him. Then Jesus said  
unto them, My time is not yet come; but your time  
7 is always ready. The world cannot hate you; but  
me it hateth, because I testify of it, that the works  
8 thereof are evil. Go ye up unto this feast; I go  
not up yet unto this feast; for my time is not yet  
9 full come. When he had said these words unto  
10 them, he abode still in Galilee. But when the time  
Lk.9.51 was come that he should be received up, and his

brethren were gone unto the feast, he steadfastly set his face to go to Jerusalem; not openly, but as it  
Lk.9.52 were in secret; and sent messengers before his face; and they went, and entered into a village of the  
53 Samaritans to make ready for him. And they did not receive him, because his face was as though he  
54 would go to Jerusalem. And when his disciples, James and John, saw this, they said, Lord, wilt thou that we command fire to come down from heaven, and consume them, even as Elijah\* did?  
55 But he turned and rebuked them, and said, Ye  
56 know not what manner of spirit ye are of. For the Son of man is not come to destroy men's lives, but to save them. And they went to another village.

Lk. And it came to pass, as he went to Jerusalem,  
17.11 he entered into a certain village; and there met him ten men that were lepers, which stood afar  
13 off; and they lifted up their voices, and said, Jesus,  
14 Master, have mercy on us. And when he saw them, he said unto them, Go show yourselves unto the priests. And it came to pass, that, as they went,  
15 they were cleansed. And one of them, when he saw that he was healed, turned back, and with a  
16 loud voice glorified God, and fell down on his face at his feet, giving him thanks; and he was a Sa-  
17 maritan. And Jesus answering, said, Were there  
18 not ten cleansed? but where are the nine? Thero

\* 2 Ki. 1: 10—12.

Lk. are not found that returned to give glory to God,  
17.19 save this stranger. And he said unto him, Arise,  
go thy way; thy faith hath made thee whole.

---

## CHAPTER XLI.

*Christ teaches in the temple.*

Jn. 7.11 THEN the Jews sought him at the feast, and said,  
12 Where is he? And there was much murmuring  
among the people concerning him; for some said,  
He is a good man; others said, Nay; but he deceiv-  
13 eth the people. Howbeit, no man spake openly of  
him for fear of the Jews.  
14 Now about the midst of the feast, Jesus went up  
15 into the temple, and taught. And the Jews mar-  
velled, saying, How knoweth this man letters, hav-  
16 ing never learned? Jesus answered them, and said,  
17 My doctrine is not mine, but his that sent me. If  
any man will do his will, he shall know of the doc-  
trine, whether it be of God, or whether I speak of  
18 myself. He that speaketh of himself seeketh his  
own glory; but he that seeketh his glory that sent  
him, the same is true, and no unrighteousness is in  
19 him. Did not Moses give you the law,\* and yet  
none of you keepeth the law? Why go ye about  
20 to kill me? The people answered and said, Thou  
21 hast a devil: who goeth about to kill thee? Jesus

\* Ex. 24: 2; Deut. 33: 4.



answered and said unto them, I have done one  
Jn.7.22 work, and ye all marvel. Moses, therefore, gave  
unto you circumcision not because it is of Moses,  
but of the fathers,\* and ye on the Sabbath-day  
23 circumcise a man. If a man on the Sabbath-day  
receive circumcision, that the law of Moses should  
not be broken; are ye angry at me because I have  
made a man every whit whole on the Sabbath-day?  
24 Judge not according to the appearance, but judge  
25 righteous judgment. Then said some of them of  
Jerusalem, Is not this he whom they seek to kill?  
26 But, lo, he speaketh boldly, and they say nothing  
unto him. Do the rulers know, indeed, that this is  
27 the very Christ? Howbeit, we know this man  
whence he is; but when Christ cometh, no man  
28 knoweth whence he is.† Then cried Jesus in the  
temple as he taught, saying, Ye both know me, and  
ye know whence I am; and I am not come of my-  
self, but he that sent me is true, whom ye know  
29 not. But I know him; for I am from him, and he  
hath sent me.  
30 Then they sought to take him; but no man laid  
hands on him, because his hour was not yet come.  
31 And many of the people believed on him, and said,  
When Christ cometh, will he do more miracles than  
32 these which this man hath done? The Pharisees  
heard that the people murmured such things con-  
cerning him; and the Pharisees and the chief  
priests sent officers to take him.

\* Gen. 17 : 10—14 ; Lev. 12 : 3.

† Is. 53 : 8.

- Jn. 7. 33 Then said Jesus unto them, Yet a little while am I with you, and then I go unto him that sent me.
- 34 Ye shall seek me, and shall not find me; and where
- 35 I am, thither ye cannot come. Then said the Jews among themselves, Whither will he go, that we shall not find him? Will he go unto the dispersed
- 36 among the Gentiles, and teach the Gentiles? What manner of saying is this that he said, Ye shall seek me, and shall not find me? and where I am, thither
- 37 ye cannot come? In the last day, that great day of the feast, Jesus stood and cried, saying, If any
- 38 man thirst, let him come unto me, and drink. He that believeth on me, as the Scripture hath said, out of his belly shall flow rivers of living water.
- 39 But this spake he of the Spirit, which they that believe on him should receive; for the Holy Ghost was not yet given; because that Jesus was not yet glorified.
- 40 Many of the people, therefore, when they heard this saying, said, Of a truth this is the Prophet.
- 41 Others said, This is the Christ. But some said,
- 42 Shall Christ come out of Galilee? Hath not the Scripture said,\* That Christ cometh of the seed of David, and out of the town of Bethle-
- 43 hem, where David was? So there was a division
- 44 among the people because of him. And some of them would have taken him; but no man laid hands on him.
- 45 Then came the officers to the chief priests and

\* Ps. 132: 11; Is. 11: 1; Jer. 23: 5; Mi. 5: 2.

Pharisees, and they said unto them, Why have ye  
 Jn.7.46 not brought him? The officers answered, Never  
 47 man spake like this man. Then answered them the  
 48 Pharisees, Are ye also deceived? Have any of the  
 49 rulers, or of the Pharisees, believed on him? But  
 this people who knoweth not the law are cursed.  
 50 Nicodemus saith unto them (he that came to Jesus  
 51 by night, being one of them), Doth our law judge  
 any man, before it hear him, and know what he  
 52 doeth? \* They answered and said unto him, Art  
 thou also of Galilee? Search, and look; for out  
 53 of Galilee ariseth no prophet. And every man  
 went unto his own house.

---

## CHAPTER XLII.

*The woman taken in adultery — Christ continues preaching in the temple.*

Jn.8.1 JESUS went unto the Mount of Olives. And  
 2 early in the morning he came again into the temple;  
 and all the people came unto him; and he sat down  
 3 and taught them. And the scribes and Pharisees  
 brought unto him a woman taken in adultery, and,  
 4 when they had set her in the midst, they say unto  
 him, Master, this woman was taken in adultery, in  
 5 the very act. Now Moses in the law commanded  
 us, That such should be stoned; † but what sayest  
 6 thou? This they said, tempting him, that they

\* Deut. 1: 17.

† Lev. 20: 10; Deut. 22: 24.

might have to accuse him. But Jesus stooped down, and with his finger wrote on the ground, as though  
Jn.8.7 he heard them not. So, when they continued asking him, he lifted up himself, and said unto them, He that is without sin among you, let him first cast  
8 a stone at her. And again he stooped down, and  
9 wrote on the ground. And they which heard it, being convicted by their own conscience, went out one by one, beginning at the eldest, even unto the last; and Jesus was left alone, and the woman  
10 standing in the midst. When Jesus had lifted up himself, and saw none but the woman, he said unto her, Woman, where are those thine accusers? hath  
11 no man condemned thee? She said, No man, Lord. And Jesus said unto her, Neither do I condemn thee; go, and sin no more.

12 Then spake Jesus again unto them, saying, I am the light of the world; he that followeth me shall not walk in darkness, but shall have the light of  
13 life. The Pharisees, therefore, said unto him, Thou bearest record of thyself; thy record is not true.  
14 Jesus answered and said unto them, Though I bear record of myself, yet my record is true; for I know whence I came, and whither I go; but ye cannot  
15 tell whence I come, and whither I go. Ye judge  
16 after the flesh: I judge no man. And yet if I judge, my judgment is true; for I am not alone,  
17 but I and the Father that sent me. It is also written in your law, that the testimony of two men is

Jn.8.18 true.\* I am one that bear witness of myself, and the Father that sent me beareth witness of me.  
19 Then said they unto him, Where is thy Father? Jesus answered, Ye neither know me nor my Father; if ye had known me, ye should have  
20 known my Father also. These words spake Jesus in the treasury, as he taught in the temple; and no man laid hands on him; for his hour was not yet  
21 come. Then said Jesus again unto them, I go my way, and ye shall seek me, and shall die in your  
22 sins; whither I go, ye cannot come. Then said the Jews, Will he kill himself? because he saith,  
23 Whither I go, ye cannot come. And he said unto them, Ye are from beneath; I am from above; ye  
24 are of this world; I am not of this world. I said, therefore, unto you, That ye shall die in your sins: for if ye believe not that I am he, ye shall die in  
25 your sins. Then said they unto him, Who art thou? And Jesus saith unto them, Even the same  
26 that I said unto you from the beginning. I have many things to say, and to judge of you; but he that sent me is true; and I speak to the world  
27 those things which I have heard of him. They understood not that he spake to them of the Father.  
28 Then said Jesus unto them, When ye have lifted up the Son of man, then shall ye know that I am he, and that I do nothing of myself; but as my  
29 Father hath taught me, I speak these things. And he that sent me is with me; the Father hath not

\* Deut. 17 : 6 ; 19 : 15.

my honor is nothing; it is my Father that honoreth  
 Jn.8.55 me, of whom ye say, That he is your God; yet ye  
 have not known him; but I know him; and if I  
 should say, I know him not, I shall be a liar like  
 unto you; but I know him, and keep his saying.  
 56 Your father Abraham rejoiced to see my day; and  
 57 he saw it, and was glad.\* Then said the Jews unto  
 him, Thou art not yet fifty years old, and hast thou  
 58 seen Abraham? Jesus said unto them, Verily,  
 verily, I say unto you, before Abraham was, I am.  
 59 Then took they up stones to cast at him; but Jesus  
 hid himself, and went out of the temple, going  
 through the midst of them, and so passed by.

## CHAPTER XLIV.

*Christ tempted by a lawyer — The good Samaritan —  
 Martha encumbered with serving — Sight given to a  
 man who was born blind — The Pharisees murmur,  
 and cast the man out of the synagogue.*

Lk. AND, behold, a certain lawyer stood up, and  
 10.25 tempted him, saying, Master, what shall I do to  
 26 inherit eternal life? He said unto him, What is  
 27 written in the law? how readest thou? And he,  
 answering, said, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God  
 with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with  
 all thy strength, and with all thy mind; and thy  
 28 neighbor as thyself.† And he said unto him, Thou

\* Gen. 22: 8—18.

† Deut. 6: 5. Lev. 19: 18.



Lk hast answered right; this do, and thou shalt live.  
10.29 But he, willing to justify himself, said unto Jesus,  
30 And who is my neighbor? And Jesus answering,  
said, A certain man went down from Jerusalem to  
Jericho, and fell among thieves, who stripped him  
of his raiment, and wounded him, and departed,  
31 leaving him half dead. And, by chance, there came  
down a certain priest that way; and when he saw  
32 him, he passed by on the other side. And likewise  
a Levite, when he was at the place, came and looked  
33 on him, and passed by on the other side. But a  
certain Samaritan, as he journeyed, came where he  
was; and when he saw him, he had compassion on  
34 him, and went to him, and bound up his wounds,  
pouring in oil and wine, and set him on his own  
beast, and brought him to an inn, and took care of  
35 him. And on the morrow, when he departed, he  
took out two pence, and gave them to the host, and  
said unto him, Take care of him; and whatsoever  
thou spendest more, when I come again, I will re-  
36 pay thee. Which now of these three, thinkest thou,  
was neighbor unto him that fell among the thieves?  
37 And he said, He that showed mercy on him. Then  
said Jesus unto him, Go, and do thou likewise.  
38 Now it came to pass, as they went, that he en-  
tered into a certain village; and a certain woman,  
39 named Martha, received him into her house. And  
she had a sister called Mary, which also sat at  
40 Jesus' feet, and heard his word. But Martha was  
cumbered about much serving, and came to him,

and said, Lord, dost thou not care that my sister  
Lk. hath left me to serve alone? bid her, therefore, that  
10.41 she help me. And Jesus answered and said unto  
her, Martha, Martha, thou art careful and troubled  
42 about many things; but one thing is needful; and  
Mary hath chosen that good part, which shall not  
be taken away from her.

Jn.9.1 And as Jesus passed by, he saw a man which  
2 was blind from his birth. And his disciples asked  
him, saying, Master, who did sin, this man, or his  
3 parents, that he was born blind? Jesus answered,  
Neither hath this man sinned, nor his parents; but  
that the works of God should be made manifest in  
4 him. I must work the works of him that sent me,  
while it is day; the night cometh, when no man  
5 can work. As long as I am in the world, I am the  
6 light of the world. When he had thus spoken, he  
spat on the ground, and made clay of the spittle,  
and he anointed the eyes of the blind man with the  
7 clay, and said unto him, Go, wash in the pool of  
Siloam, which is, by interpretation, Sent. He went  
his way, therefore, and washed, and came seeing.  
8 The neighbors, therefore, and they which before  
had seen him, that he was blind, said, Is not this he  
9 that sat and begged? Some said, This is he; others  
10 said, He is like him; but he said, I am he. Therefore  
said they unto him, How were thine eyes opened?  
11 He answered and said, A man that is called Jesus,  
made clay, and anointed mine eyes, and said unto  
me, Go to the pool of Siloam, and wash; and I went

Jn. 9. 12 and washed, and I received sight. Then said they unto him, Where is he? He said, I know not.

13 They brought to the Pharisees him that afore-  
14 time was blind. And it was the Sabbath-day when  
15 Jesus made the clay, and opened his eyes. Then  
again the Pharisees also asked him how he had received his sight. He said unto them, He put clay  
16 upon mine eyes, and I washed, and do see. Therefore said some of the Pharisees, This man is not of God, because he keepeth not the Sabbath-day. Others said, How can a man that is a sinner do such miracles?  
17 And there was a division among them. They say unto the blind man again, What sayest thou of him, that he hath opened thine eyes? He said, He is  
18 a prophet. But the Jews did not believe concerning him, that he had been blind, and received his sight, until they called the parents of him that had received his sight. And they asked them, saying, Is  
19 this your son, who ye say was born blind? how, then, doth he now see? His parents answered them, and said, We know that this is our son, and  
21 that he was born blind; but by what means he now seeth, we know not; or who hath opened his eyes, we know not; he is of age, ask him; he  
22 shall speak for himself. These words spake his parents, because they feared the Jews; for the Jews had agreed already, that if any man did confess that he was Christ, he should be put out of the  
23 synagogue. Therefore said his parents, He is of  
24 age, ask him. Then again called they the man

that was blind, and said unto him, Give God the  
Jn.9.25 praise; we know that this man is a sinner. He  
answered and said, Whether he be a sinner or no, I  
know not; one thing I know, that, whereas I was  
26 blind, now I see. Then said they to him again,  
What did he to thee? how opened he thine  
27 eyes? He answered them, I have told you already,  
and ye did not hear; wherefore would ye hear it  
28 again? Will ye also be his disciples? Then they  
reviled him, and said, Thou art his disciple; but  
29 we are Moses' disciples. We know that God spake  
unto Moses;\* as for this fellow we know not from  
30 whence he is. The man answered and said unto  
them, Why, herein is a marvellous thing, that ye  
know not from whence he is, and yet he hath opened  
31 mine eyes. Now we know that God heareth not  
sinners; but if any man be a worshipper of God,  
32 and doeth his will, him he heareth. Since the  
world began was it not heard that any man opened  
33 the eyes of one that was born blind. If this man  
were not of God, he could do nothing.  
34 They answered and said unto him, Thou wast  
altogether born in sins, and dost thou teach us?  
And they cast him out.  
35 Jesus heard that they had cast him out; and,  
when he had found him, he said unto him, Dost  
36 thou believe on the Son of God? He answered and  
said, Who is he, Lord, that I might believe on  
37 him? And Jesus said unto him, Thou hast both

\* Numb. 12: 7, 8.

Jn.9.38 seen him, and it is he that talketh with thee. And he said, Lord, I believe. And he worshipped him.  
39 And Jesus said, For judgment I am come into this world; that they which see not, might see; and that they which see, might be made blind.\*  
40 And some of the Pharisees, which were with him, heard these words, and said unto him, Are we  
41 blind also? Jesus said unto them, If ye were blind, ye should have no sin; but now ye say, We see; therefore your sin remaineth.

---

## CHAPTER XLV.

### *The sheep-fold and door.*

Jn.10.1 VERILY, verily, I say unto you, He that entereth not by the door into the sheep-fold, but climbeth up some other way, the same is a thief and a robber.  
2 But he that entereth in by the door is the shepherd of the sheep. To him the porter openeth; and the sheep hear his voice; and he calleth his  
4 own sheep by name, and leadeth them out. And when he putteth forth his own sheep, he goeth before them, and the sheep follow him: for they know  
5 his voice. And a stranger will they not follow, but will flee from him: for they know not the voice of  
6 strangers. This parable spake Jesus unto them; but they understood not what things they were  
7 which he spake unto them. Then said Jesus unto

\* Is. 6: 10; 44: 18.

them again, Verily, verily, I say unto you, I am  
Jn.10.8 the door of the sheep. All that ever came before  
me are thieves and robbers; but the sheep did not  
9 hear them. I am the door: by me if any man  
enter in, he shall be saved, and shall go in and out,  
10 and find pasture. The thief cometh not, but for to  
steal, and to kill, and to destroy; I am come that  
they might have life, and that they might have it  
11 more abundantly. I am the good shepherd; \* the  
12 good shepherd giveth his life for the sheep. But  
he that is a hireling, and not the shepherd, whose  
own the sheep are not, seeth the wolf coming, and  
leaveth the sheep, and fleeth; and the wolf catcheth  
13 them and scattereth the sheep. The hireling fleeth,  
because he is a hireling, and careth not for the  
14 sheep. I am the good shepherd, and know my  
15 sheep, and am known of mine. As the Father  
knoweth me, even so know I the Father; and I lay  
16 down my life for the sheep. And other sheep I  
have, which are not of this fold; them, also, I must  
bring, and they shall hear my voice; and there  
17 shall be one fold, and one shepherd. Therefore  
doth my Father love me, because I lay down my  
18 life, that I might take it again. No man taketh it  
from me, but I lay it down of myself; I have power  
to lay it down, and I have power to take it again.  
This commandment have I received of my Father.  
19 There was a division, therefore, again among the  
20 Jews for these sayings. And many of them said,

\* Ps. 23: 1.



He hath a devil, and is mad; why hear ye him?  
Jn.10.21 Others said, these are not the words of him that  
hath a devil. Can a devil open the eyes of the  
blind?

22 And it was at Jerusalem the feast of the dedi-  
23 cation, and it was winter. And Jesus walked in  
24 the temple in Solomon's porch. Then came the  
Jews round about him, and said unto him, How  
long dost thou make us to doubt? If thou be the  
25 Christ, tell us plainly. Jesus answered them, I told  
you, and ye believed not; the works that I do in  
26 my Father's name, they bear witness of me. But  
ye believe not, because ye are not of my sheep, as I  
27 said unto you. My sheep hear my voice, and I  
28 know them, and they follow me; and I give unto  
them eternal life; and they shall never perish,  
29 neither shall any pluck them out of my hand. My  
Father, which gave them me, is greater than all;  
and none is able to pluck them out of my Father's  
30,31 hand. I and my Father are one. Then the Jews  
32 took up stones again to stone him. Jesus answered  
them, Many good works have I showed you from  
my Father; for which of those works do ye stone  
33 me? The Jews answered him, saying, For a good  
work we stone thee not, but for blasphemy, and be-  
cause that thou, being a man, makest thyself God.  
34 Jesus answered them, Is it not written in your law,  
35 I said, Ye are gods?\* If he called them gods, unto  
whom the word of God came, and the Scripture

\* Ex. 22: 28; Ps. 82: 6.

Jn.10.36 cannot be broken, say ye of him, whom the Father hath sanctified, and sent into the world, Thou blasphemest; because I said, I am the Son of God?  
37 If I do not the works of my Father, believe me  
38 not. But if I do, though ye believe not me, believe the works; that ye may know, and believe, that the Father is in me, and I in him.  
39 Therefore they sought again to take him; but he  
40 escaped out of their hand, and went away again beyond Jordan, into the place where John at first  
41 baptized; and there he abode. And many resorted unto him, and said, John did no miracle: but all things that John spake of this man were true.  
42 And many believed on him there.

---

## CHAPTER XLVI.

### *Lazarus raised from the dead.*

Jn.11.1 Now a certain man was sick, named Lazarus, of Bethany, the town of Mary and her sister Martha.  
2 It was that Mary which anointed the Lord with ointment, and wiped his feet with her hair, whose  
3 brother Lazarus was sick. Therefore his sisters sent unto him, saying, Lord, behold, he whom thou  
4 lovest is sick. When Jesus heard that, he said, This sickness is not unto death, but for the glory of God, that the Son of God might be glorified  
5 thereby. Now Jesus loved Martha, and her sister,  
6 and Lazarus. When he had heard, therefore, that

he was sick, he abode two days still in the same  
Jn.11.7 place where he was. Then after that saith he to  
8 his disciples, Let us go into Judea again. His dis-  
ciples say unto him, Master, the Jews of late sought  
9 to stone thee; and goest thou thither again? Jesus  
answered, Are there not twelve hours in the day?  
If any man walk in the day, he stumbleth not, be-  
10 cause he seeth the light of this world. But if a  
man walk in the night, he stumbleth, because there  
11 is no light in him. These things said he; and after  
that he saith unto them, Our friend Lazarus sleep-  
eth; but I go, that I may awake him out of sleep.  
12 Then said his disciples, Lord, if he sleep, he shall  
13 do well. Howbeit, Jesus spake of his death; but  
they thought that he had spoken of taking of rest  
14 in sleep. Then said Jesus unto them plainly, Laz-  
15 arus is dead. And I am glad for your sakes that  
I was not there, to the intent ye may believe; nev-  
16 ertheless, let us go unto him. Then said Thomas,  
which is called Didymus, unto his fellow-disciples,  
17 Let us also go, that we may die with him. Then  
when Jesus came, he found that he had lain in the  
18 grave four days already. Now Bethany was nigh  
19 unto Jerusalem, about fifteen furlongs off; and  
many of the Jews came to Martha and Mary, to  
20 comfort them concerning their brother. Then Mar-  
tha, as soon as she heard that Jesus was coming,  
went and met him; but Mary sat still in the house.  
21 Then said Martha unto Jesus, Lord, if thou hadst  
22 been here, my brother had not died. But I know,

that even now, whatsoever thou wilt ask of God,  
Jn.11.23 God will give it thee. Jesus saith unto her, Thy  
24 brother shall rise again. Martha saith unto him, I  
know that he shall rise again in the resurrection at  
25 the last day. Jesus said unto her, I am the resur-  
rection and the life; he that believeth in me, though  
26 he were dead, yet shall he live; and whosoever liv-  
eth, and believeth in me, shall never die. Believest  
27 thou this? She saith unto him, Yea, Lord; I be-  
lieve that thou art the Christ, the Son of God,  
28 which should come into the world. And when she  
had so said, she went her way, and called Mary her  
sister secretly, saying, The Master is come, and  
29 calleth for thee. As soon as she heard that, she  
30 arose quickly, and came unto him. Now Jesus was  
not yet come into the town, but was in that place  
31 where Martha met him. The Jews then which  
were with her in the house, and comforted her,  
when they saw Mary, that she rose up hastily, and  
went out, followed her, saying, She goeth unto the  
32 grave to weep there. Then when Mary was come  
where Jesus was, and saw him, she fell down at his  
feet, saying unto him, Lord, if thou hadst been  
33 here, my brother had not died. When Jesus, there-  
fore, saw her weeping, and the Jews also weeping  
which came with her, he groaned in the spirit, and  
34 was troubled, and said, Where have ye laid him?  
35 They say unto him, Lord, come and see. Jesus  
36 wept. Then said the Jews, Behold, how he loved  
37 him! And some of them said, Could not this man,

which opened the eyes of the blind, have caused  
Jn.11.38 that even this man should not have died? Jesus,  
therefore, again groaning in himself, cometh to the  
grave. It was a cave, and a stone lay upon it.  
39 Jesus said, Take ye away the stone. Martha, the  
sister of him that was dead, saith unto him, Lord,  
by this time he stinketh; for he hath been dead  
40 four days. Jesus saith unto her, Said I not unto  
thee, that, if thou wouldst believe, thou shouldst  
41 see the glory of God? Then they took away the  
stone from the place where the dead was laid. And  
Jesus lifted up his eyes, and said, Father, I thank  
42 thee that thou hast heard me. And I knew that  
thou hearest me always; but because of the people  
which stand by I said it, that they may believe  
43 that thou hast sent me. And, when he thus had  
spoken, he cried with a loud voice, Lazarus, come  
44 forth. And he that was dead came forth, bound  
hand and foot with grave-clothes; and his face was  
bound about with a napkin. Jesus saith unto them,  
45 Loose him, and let him go. Then many of the  
Jews which came to Mary, and had seen the things  
46 which Jesus did, believed on him. But some of  
them went their ways to the Pharisees, and told  
them what things Jesus had done.  
47 Then gathered the chief priests and the Phari-  
sees a council, and said, What do we? for this man  
48 doeth many miracles. If we let him thus alone,  
all men will believe on him; and the Romans shall  
come and take away both our place and nation.



Jn.11.49 And one of them, named Caiaphas, being the high priest that same year, said unto them, Ye know  
 50 nothing at all, nor consider that it is expedient for us, that one man should die for the people, and that  
 51 the whole nation perish not. And this spake he not of himself; but being high priest that year, he prophesied that Jesus should die for that nation;  
 52 and not for that nation only, but that also he should gather together in one the children of God that  
 53 were scattered abroad. Then, from that day forth, they took counsel together for to put him to death.  
 54 Jesus, therefore, walked no more openly among the Jews; but went thence unto a country near to the wilderness, into a city called Ephraim, and there continued with his disciples.

---

## CHAPTER XLVII.

*Christ heals a woman in the synagogue — Travels toward Jerusalem — Exhorts to enter in at the strait gate — Heals a man of the dropsy.*

Lk. 13.10 AND he was teaching in one of the synagogues  
 11 on the Sabbath. And, behold, there was a woman which had a spirit of infirmity eighteen years, and was bowed together, and could in no wise lift up  
 12 herself. And when Jesus saw her, he called her to him, and said unto her, Woman, thou art loosed  
 13 from thine infirmity. And he laid his hands on her; and immediately she was made straight, and



Lk. glorified God. And the ruler of the synagogue  
13.14 answered with indignation, because that Jesus had  
healed on the Sabbath-day, and said unto the people,  
There are six days in which men ought to  
work; in them, therefore, come and be healed, and  
15 not on the Sabbath-day. The Lord then answered  
him, and said, Thou hypocrite; doth not each one  
of you on the Sabbath loose his ox, or his ass from  
16 the stall, and lead him away to watering? And  
ought not this woman, being a daughter of Abraham,  
whom Satan hath bound, lo, these eighteen  
years, be loosed from this bond on the Sabbath-day?  
17 And when he had said these things, all his adversaries  
were ashamed; and all the people rejoiced  
for all the glorious things that were done by him.  
22 And he went through the cities and villages teaching,  
and journeying toward Jerusalem.  
23 Then said one unto him, Lord, are there few that  
24 be saved? And he said unto them, Strive to enter  
in at the strait gate; for many, I say unto you,  
25 will seek to enter in, and shall not be able. When  
once the Master of the house is risen up, and hath  
shut to the door, and ye begin to stand without,  
and to knock at the door, saying, Lord, Lord, open  
unto us; and he shall answer, and say unto you, I  
26 know you not whence ye are; then shall ye begin  
to say, We have eaten and drunk in thy presence,  
27 and thou hast taught in our streets. But he shall  
say, I tell you, I know you not whence ye are;  
28 depart from me, all ye workers of iniquity. There

shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth, when ye shall see Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, and all  
LK. the prophets, in the kingdom of God, and you your-  
13.29 selves thrust out. And they shall come from the east, and from the west, and from the north, and from the south, and shall sit down in the kingdom  
30 of God. And, behold, there are last, which shall be first, and there are first, which shall be last.

31 The same day there came certain of the Pharisees, saying unto him, Get thee out, and depart  
32 hence ; for Herod will kill thee. And he said unto them, Go ye, and tell that fox, Behold, I cast out devils, and I do cures to-day and to-morrow, and  
33 the third day I shall be perfected. Nevertheless, I must walk to-day, and to-morrow, and the day following ; for it cannot be that a prophet perish out of Jerusalem.

14.1 And it came to pass, as he went into the house of one of the chief Pharisees to eat bread on the  
2 Sabbath-day, that they watched him. And, behold, there was a certain man before him, which had the  
3 dropsy. And Jesus answering, spake unto the lawyers and Pharisees, saying, Is it lawful to heal on  
4 the Sabbath-day ? And they held their peace. And  
5 he took him and healed him, and let him go ; and answered them, saying, Which of you shall have an ass or an ox fallen into a pit, and will not straight-  
6 way pull him out on the Sabbath-day ? And they could not answer him again to these things.

## CHAPTER XLVIII.

*Christ exhorts to be humble by the parable of taking seats at feasts — The parable of the supper — Exhorts to forsake all and follow him.*

- Lk. 14. 7    AND he put forth a parable to those which were bidden, when he marked how they chose out the  
8 chief rooms, saying unto them, When thou art bidden of any man to a wedding, sit not down in the highest room, lest a more honorable man than thou  
9 be bidden of him; and he that bade thee and him come and say to thee, Give this man place; and thou begin with shame to take the lowest room.  
10 But when thou art bidden, go and sit down in the lowest room; that when he that bade thee cometh, he may say unto thee, Friend, go up higher; then shalt thou have worship in the presence of them  
11 that sit at meat with thee. For, whosoever exalteth himself shall be abased; and he that humbleth himself shall be exalted.  
12 Then said he also to him that bade him, When thou makest a dinner or a supper, call not thy friends, nor thy brethren, neither thy kinsmen, nor thy rich neighbors; lest they also bid thee again,  
13 and a recompense be made thee. But when thou makest a feast, call the poor, the maimed, the lame,  
14 the blind; and thou shalt be blessed; for they cannot recompense thee; for thou shalt be recompensed at the resurrection of the just.

Lk. And when one of them that sat at meat with him  
14.15 heard these things, he said unto them, Blessed is he  
16 that shall eat bread in the kingdom of God. Then  
said he unto him, A certain man made a great sup-  
17 per, and bade many; and sent his servant at sup-  
per-time to say to them that were bidden, Come, for  
18 all things are now ready. And they all with one  
consent began to make excuse. The first said unto  
him, I have bought a piece of ground, and I must  
needs go and see it; I pray thee have me excused.  
19 And another said, I have bought five yoke of oxen,  
and I go to prove them; I pray thee have me ex-  
20 cused. And another said, I have married a wife;  
21 and therefore I cannot come. So that servant  
came, and showed his lord these things. Then the  
master of the house, being angry, said to his ser-  
vant, Go out quickly into the streets and lanes of  
the city, and bring in hither the poor, and the  
22 maimed, and the halt, and the blind. And the ser-  
vant said, Lord, it is done as thou hast commanded,  
23 and yet there is room. And the lord said unto the  
servant, Go out into the highways and hedges, and  
compel them to come in, that my house may be  
24 filled. For I say unto you, that none of those men  
which were bidden, shall taste of my supper.  
25 And there went great multitudes with him; and  
26 he turned, and said unto them, If any man come to  
me, and hate not his father, and mother, and wife,  
and children, and brethren, and sisters, yea, and his  
27 own life also, he cannot be my disciple. And who-

Lk. soever doth not bear his cross, and come after me,  
 14.28 cannot be my disciple. For which of you, intending to build a tower, sitteth not down first, and counteth the cost, whether he have sufficient to  
 29 finish it? Lest, haply, after he hath laid the foundation, and is not able to finish it, all that behold it  
 30 begin to mock him, saying, This man began to build,  
 31 and was not able to finish. Or what king, going to make war against another king, sitteth not down first, and consulteth whether he be able with ten thousand to meet him that cometh against him with  
 32 twenty thousand? Or else, while the other is a great way off, he sendeth an ambassage, and desireth  
 33 conditions of peace. So, likewise, whosoever he be of you, that forsaketh not all that he hath, he cannot be my disciple.

---

## CHAPTER XLIX.

*The parable of the lost sheep — Ten pieces of silver —  
 The prodigal son.*

Lk. 15.1 THEN drew near unto him all the publicans and  
 2 sinners for to hear him. And the Pharisees and scribes murmured, saying, This man receiveth sinners and eateth with them.  
 3 And he spake this parable unto them, saying,  
 4 What man of you having a hundred sheep, if he lose one of them, doth not leave the ninety and nine in the wilderness, and go after that which is



Lk.15.5 lost, until he find it? And when he hath found it,  
6 he layeth it on his shoulders, rejoicing. And when  
he cometh home, he calleth together his friends and  
neighbors, saying unto them, Rejoice with me; for  
7 I have found my sheep which was lost. I say unto  
you, that likewise joy shall be in heaven over one  
sinner that repenteth, more than over ninety and  
nine just persons, which need no repentance.

8 Either what woman, having ten pieces of silver,  
if she lose one piece, doth not light a candle, and  
sweep the house, and seek diligently till she find it?  
9 And when she hath found it, she calleth her friends  
and her neighbors together, saying, Rejoice with  
me; for I have found the piece which I had lost.  
10 Likewise, I say unto you, There is joy in the pres-  
ence of the angels of God over one sinner that  
repenteth.

11 And he said, A certain man had two sons; and the  
12 younger of them said to his father, Father, give me  
the portion of goods that falleth to me. And he  
13 divided unto them his living. And not many days  
after, the younger son gathered all together, and  
took his journey into a far country, and there  
14 wasted his substance with riotous living. And  
when he had spent all, there arose a mighty famine  
15 in that land; and he began to be in want. And he  
went and joined himself to a citizen of that coun-  
try; and he sent him into his fields to feed swine.  
16 And he would fain have filled his belly with the  
husks that the swine did eat; and no man gave



Lk. unto him. And when he came to himself, he said,  
15.17 How many hired servants of my father's have bread  
enough, and to spare, and I perish with hunger!  
18 I will arise, and go to my father, and will say unto  
him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and  
19 before thee, and am no more worthy to be called  
thy son; make me as one of thy hired servants.  
20 And he arose and came to his father. But, when  
he was yet a great way off, his father saw him and  
had compassion, and ran, and fell on his neck, and  
21 kissed him. And the son said unto him, Father, I  
have sinned against heaven, and in thy sight, and  
22 am no more worthy to be called thy son. But the  
father said to his servants, Bring forth the best  
robe, and put it on him; and put a ring on his  
23 hand, and shoes on his feet; and bring hither the  
fatted calf, and kill it; and let us eat and be merry;  
24 for this my son was dead, and is alive again; he  
was lost, and is found. And they began to be  
25 merry. Now, his elder son was in the field; and as  
he came and drew nigh to the house, he heard music  
26 and dancing. And he called one of the servants,  
27 and asked what these things meant. And he said  
unto him, Thy brother is come; and thy father hath  
killed the fatted calf, because he hath received him  
28 safe and sound. And he was angry and would not  
go in; and therefore came his father out, and en-  
29 treated him. And he answering, said to his father,  
Lo, these many years do I serve thee, neither trans-  
gressed I at any time thy commandment; and yet

Lk. thou never gavest me a kid, that I might make  
15.30 merry with my friends; but as soon as this thy son  
was come, which hath devoured thy living with har-  
31 lots, thou hast killed for him the fatted calf. And  
he said unto him, Son, thou art ever with me, and  
32 all that I have is thine. It was meet that we  
should make merry and be glad; for this thy  
brother was dead, and is alive again; and was lost,  
and is found.

---

## CHAPTER L.

*The unjust steward — The parable of the rich man and Lazarus.*

Lk.16.1 AND he said also unto his disciples, There was a  
certain rich man, which had a steward; and the  
same was accused unto him that he had wasted his  
2 goods. And he called him, and said unto him,  
How is it that I hear this of thee? give an account  
of thy stewardship; for thou mayst be no longer  
3 steward. Then the steward said within himself,  
What shall I do, for my lord taketh away from me  
the stewardship? I cannot dig; to beg I am  
4 ashamed. I am resolved what to do, that when I  
am put out of the stewardship, they may receive  
5 me into their houses. So he called every one of  
his lord's debtors unto him, and said unto the first,  
6 How much owest thou unto my lord? And he said,  
A hundred measures of oil. And he said unto

him, Take thy bill, and sit down quickly, and write  
Lk.16.7 fifty. Then said he to another, And how much  
owest thou? And he said, A hundred measures of  
wheat. And he said unto him, Take thy bill and  
8 write fourscore. And the lord commended the  
unjust steward, because he had done wisely; for  
the children of this world are in their generation  
9 wiser than the children of light. And I say unto  
you, Make to yourselves friends of the mammon of  
unrighteousness; that, when ye fail, they may re-  
10 ceive you into everlasting habitations. He that is  
faithful in that which is least, is faithful also in  
much; and he that is unjust in the least, is unjust  
11 also in much. If, therefore, ye have not been faith-  
ful in the unrighteous mammon, who will commit to  
12 your trust the true riches? And if ye have not  
been faithful in that which is another man's, who  
shall give you that which is your own?

14 And the Pharisees, also, who were covetous,  
heard all these things; and they derided him.  
15 And he said unto them, Ye are they which justify  
yourselves before men; but God knoweth your  
hearts; for that which is highly esteemed among  
16 men, is abomination in the sight of God. The law  
and the prophets were until John; since that time  
the kingdom of God is preached, and every man  
presseth into it.

19 There was a certain rich man, which was clothed  
in purple and fine linen, and fared sumptuously  
20 every day; and there was a certain beggar named

Lk. Lazarus, which was laid at his gate full of sores,  
16.21 and desiring to be fed with the crumbs which fell  
from the rich man's table ; moreover the dogs came  
22 and licked his sores. And it came to pass, that the  
beggar died, and was carried by the angels into  
Abraham's bosom ; the rich man also died, and was  
23 buried ; and in hell he lifted up his eyes, being in  
torments, and seeth Abraham afar off, and Lazarus  
24 in his bosom. And he cried, and said, Father Abra-  
ham, have mercy on me ; and send Lazarus, that he  
may dip the tip of his finger in water and cool my  
25 tongue ; for I am tormented in this flame. But  
Abraham said, Son, remember, that thou in thy  
lifetime receivedst thy good things, and likewise  
Lazarus evil things ; but now he is comforted, and  
26 thou art tormented. And, besides all this, between  
us and you there is a great gulf fixed ; so that they  
which would pass from hence to you cannot ; neither  
can they pass to us, that would come from thence.  
27 Then he said, I pray thee, therefore, father, that  
28 thou wouldst send him to my father's house. For  
I have five brethren ; that he may testify unto  
them, lest they also come into this place of torment.  
29 Abraham saith unto him, They have Moses and the  
30 prophets ; let them hear them. And he said, Nay,  
father Abraham ; but if one went unto them from  
31 the dead, they will repent. And he said unto him,  
If they hear not Moses and the prophets, neither  
will they be persuaded though one rose from the  
dead.

## CHAPTER LI.

*The unjust judge — The Pharisee and publican — Instruction relative to putting away a wife — Little children brought to Christ — The young ruler inquires how to obtain eternal life.*

Lk. AND when he was demanded of the Pharisees,  
17.20 when the kingdom of God should come, he answered  
them, and said, The kingdom of God cometh not  
21 with observation. Neither shall they say, Lo, here!  
or lo, there! for, behold, the kingdom of God is  
within you.

Lk.18.1 And he spake a parable unto them, to this end,  
that men ought always to pray, and not to faint;  
2 saying, There was in a city a judge, which feared  
3 not God, neither regarded man; and there was a  
widow in that city; and she came unto him, say-  
4 ing, Avenge me of mine adversary. And he would  
not for a while; but afterward he said within him-  
5 self, Though I fear not God, nor regard man; yet,  
because this widow troubleth me, I will avenge her,  
6 lest by her continual coming she weary me. And  
the Lord said, Hear what the unjust judge saith.  
7 And shall not God avenge his own elect, which cry  
day and night unto him, though he bear long with  
8 them? I tell you that he will avenge them speed-  
ily. Nevertheless, when the Son of man cometh,  
shall he find faith on the earth?

9 And he spake this parable unto certain which



Lk. trusted in themselves that they were righteous, and  
 18.10 despised others: Two men went up into the temple  
 to pray; the one a Pharisee, and the other a pub-  
 11 lican. The Pharisee stood and prayed thus with  
 himself, God, I thank thee, that I am not as other  
 men are, extortioners, unjust, adulterers, or even as  
 12 this publican. I fast twice in the week, I give  
 13 tithes of all that I possess. And the publican, stand-  
 ing afar off, would not lift up so much as his eyes  
 unto heaven, but smote upon his breast, saying,  
 14 God be merciful to me a sinner. I tell you, This  
 man went down to his house justified rather than  
 the other; for every one that exalteth himself shall  
 be abased; and he that humbleth himself shall be  
 exalted.

Mt.19.3 The Pharisees also came unto him, tempting him,  
 and saying unto him, Is it lawful for a man to put  
 4 away his wife for every cause?\* And he answered  
 and said unto them, Have ye not read, that he  
 which made them at the beginning, made them male  
 5 and female,† and said, For this cause shall a  
 man leave father and mother, and shall cleave to  
 his wife; and they twain shall be one flesh?  
 6 Wherefore they are no more twain, but one flesh.  
 What, therefore, God hath joined together, let not  
 7 man put asunder. They say unto him, Why did  
 Moses ‡ then command to give a writing of divorce-  
 8 ment, and to put her away? He saith unto them,  
 Moses, because of the hardness of your hearts,

\* Mal. 2 : 14—16.

† Gen. 1 : 27 ; 5 : 2.

‡ Deut. 24 : 1.



suffered you to put away your wives ; but from the  
Mt.19.9 beginning it was not so. And I say unto you,  
Whosoever shall put away his wife, except it be for  
fornication, and shall marry another, committeth  
adultery ; and whoso marrieth her which is put  
away doth commit adultery.

10 His disciples say unto him, If the case of the  
man be so with his wife, it is not good to marry.

11 But he said unto them, All men cannot receive this

12 saying, save they to whom it is given. For there  
are some eunuchs, which were so born from their  
mother's womb ; and there are some eunuchs, which  
were made eunuchs of men ; and there be eunuchs,  
which have made themselves eunuchs for the king-  
dom of heaven's sake. He that is able to receive  
it, let him receive it.

13 Then were there brought unto him little children,  
that he should put his hands on them and pray ;  
Mk. and his disciples rebuked those that brought them.

10.13

14 But when Jesus saw it, he was much displeased,  
and said unto them, Suffer the little children to  
come unto me, and forbid them not ; for of such is  
15 the kingdom of God. Verily I say unto you, Who-  
soever shall not receive the kingdom of God as a  
16 little child, he shall not enter therein. And he took  
them up in his arms, put his hands upon them, and  
blessed them.

17 And, when he was gone forth into the way,  
behold, there came a certain ruler running, and  
kneeled to him, and asked him, Good Master, what

Mk. good thing shall I do that I may inherit eternal  
10.18 life? And Jesus said unto him, Why callest thou  
me good? there is none good but one, that is God;

Mt. but if thou wilt enter into life, keep the command-  
19.17 ments. He saith unto him, Which? Jesus said,

18 Thou shalt do no murder, Thou shalt not commit  
adultery, Thou shalt not steal, Thou shalt not bear  
19 false witness. Honor thy father and thy mother;  
20 and, Thou shalt love thy neighbor as thyself.\* The

young man saith unto him, All these things have I  
Mk. kept from my youth up; what lack I yet? Then

10.21 Jesus beholding him, loved him, and said unto him,  
One thing thou lackest; if thou wilt be perfect, go  
thy way, sell whatsoever thou hast, and give to the  
poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven; and  
22 come, take up the cross, and follow me. And he  
was sad at that saying, and went away grieved; for  
he had great possessions.

23 And Jesus looked round about, and saith unto  
his disciples, How hardly shall they that have  
24 riches enter into the kingdom of God! And the  
disciples were astonished at his words. But Jesus  
answereth again, and saith unto them, Children,  
how hard is it for them that trust in riches to enter  
25 into the kingdom of God! It is easier for a camel  
to go through the eye of a needle, than for a rich  
man to enter into the kingdom of God.

Mt. When his disciples heard it, they were exceed-  
19.25 ingly amazed, saying, Who, then, can be saved?

\* Ex. 20: 12—15; Lev. 19: 18.

Mt. But Jesus beheld them, and said unto them, With  
19.26 men this is impossible ; but with God all things are possible.

27 Then answered Peter, and said unto him, Behold, we have forsaken all, and followed thee ; what shall  
28 we have therefore ? And Jesus said unto them, Verily I say unto you, That ye which have followed me, in the regeneration, when the Son of man shall sit in the throne of his glory, ye also shall sit upon twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel.

Mk. There is no man that hath left house, or brethren,  
10.29 or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, 30 or lands, for my sake, and the gospel's, but he shall receive a hundred fold now in this time, houses, and brethren, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and lands, with persecutions ; and in the world to  
31 come eternal life. But many that are first, shall  
32 be last ; and the last first.

---

## CHAPTER LII.

*The laborers in the vineyard — Christ foretells his death  
— The two disciples ask to sit at his right hand.*

Mt. 20.1 FOR the kingdom of heaven is like unto a man that is a householder, which went out early in the  
2 morning to hire laborers into his vineyard. And when he had agreed with the laborers for a penny  
3 a day, he sent them into his vineyard. And he went out about the third hour, and saw others

Mt. 20.<sup>4</sup> standing idle in the market-place, and said unto them, Go ye also into the vineyard; and whatsoever is right I will give you. And they went their  
5 way. Again he went out about the sixth and ninth  
6 hour, and did likewise. And about the eleventh hour he went out, and found others standing idle, and saith unto them, Why stand ye here all the day  
7 idle? They say unto him, Because no man hath hired us. He saith unto them, Go ye also into the vineyard; and whatsoever is right, that shall ye  
8 receive. So when even was come, the lord of the vineyard saith unto his steward, Call the laborers, and give them their hire, beginning from the last  
9 unto the first. And when they came that were hired about the eleventh hour, they received every  
10 man a penny. But when the first came, they supposed that they should have received more; and  
11 they likewise received every man a penny. And when they had received it, they murmured against  
12 the good man of the house, saying, These last have wrought but one hour, and thou hast made them equal unto us, which have borne the burden and  
13 heat of the day. But he answered one of them, and said, Friend, I do thee no wrong: didst thou  
14 not agree with me for a penny? Take that thine is, and go thy way; I will give unto this last even  
15 as unto thee. Is it not lawful for me to do what I will with mine own? Is thine eye evil because  
16 I am good? So the last shall be first, and the first last: for many be called, but few chosen.

Mt. 20. And *as* Jesus *was* going up to Jerusalem before *his*  
 17—19 & disciples, he took unto him the twelve apart in the  
 Mk. 10. way; and said unto them; Behold, we go up to Jeru-  
 32—34 & salem, and all things that are written by the prophets  
 Lk. 18. concerning the Son of man shall be accomplished.  
 31—34 For he shall be betrayed unto the chief priests, and  
 unto the scribes; and they shall condemn him to  
 death, and shall deliver him to the Gentiles; and  
 they shall mock him, and shall scourge him, and  
 shall spit upon him, and shall put him to death:  
 and the third day he shall rise again. And they  
 were amazed; and as they followed, they were  
 afraid; *but* they understood none of these things;  
 and this saying was hid from them, neither knew  
 they the things which were spoken.

Mt. 20. Then came to him James and John, the sons of  
 20—24 & Zebedee, *with their* mother, worshipping him, and  
 Mk. 10. saying, Master, we would that thou shouldst do for  
 35—41. us whatsoever we shall desire. And he said unto  
 them, What would ye that I should do for you?  
 They said unto him, Grant unto us that we may  
 sit, one on thy right hand, and the other on thy  
 left hand, in thy kingdom. But Jesus said unto  
 them, Ye know not what ye ask: are ye able to  
 drink of the cup that I drink of? and be baptized  
 with the baptism that I am baptized with? And  
 they say unto him, We are able. And Jesus said  
 unto them, Ye shall indeed drink of the cup that I  
 drink of; and with the baptism that I am baptized  
 withal shall ye be baptized: but to sit on my right



hand, and on my left hand, is not mine to give ;  
 but it shall be given to them for whom it is pre-  
 pared of my Father. And when the ten heard it,  
 they began to be much displeased with the two  
 Mt. brethren James and John. But Jesus called them  
 20.25 unto him, and said, Ye know that the princes of the  
 Gentiles exercise dominion over them, and they that  
 26 are great exercise authority upon them. But it  
 shall not be so among you : but whosoever will be  
 27 great among you, let him be your minister ; and  
 whosoever will be chief among you, let him be your  
 28 servant : even as the Son of man came not to be  
 ministered unto, but to minister, and to give his  
 life a ransom for many.

---

## CHAPTER LIII.

*Jesus gives sight to a blind man at Jericho — Calls Zac-  
 cheus — The ten pounds given to ten servants.*

Mk. AND they came to Jericho : and as he went out  
 10.46 & of Jericho with his disciples, and a great number of  
 Mt. people, behold two blind men sat by the way side  
 20.29 & begging ; *and one of them*, Bartimeus, son of Tim-  
 Lk. eus, hearing the multitude pass by, asked what it  
 18.36 meant. And they told him that Jesus of Nazareth  
 37 passeth by. And he cried, saying, Jesus, thou son  
 38 of David, have mercy on me. And they which  
 39 went before rebuked him, that he should hold his  
 peace : but he cried so much the more, Thou son



Mk. of David, have mercy on me. And Jesus stood  
10.49 still, and commanded him to be called. And they  
call the blind man, saying unto him, Be of good  
50 comfort, rise ; he calleth thee. And he, casting  
51 away his garment, rose, and came to Jesus. And  
Jesus said unto him, What wilt thou that I should  
do unto thee ? The blind man said unto him, Lord,  
52 that I might receive my sight. And Jesus said  
unto him, Receive thy sight ; go thy way ; thy faith  
hath made thee whole. And immediately he re-  
ceived his sight, and followed Jesus in the way,  
Lk. glorifying God. And all the people, when they  
18.43 saw it, gave praise unto God.

19.2 And, behold, there was a man named Zaccheus,  
which was the chief among the publicans, and he  
3 was rich. And he sought to see Jesus who he was ;  
and could not for the press, because he was little of  
4 stature. And he ran before, and climbed up into a  
sycamore tree to see him ; for he was to pass that way.  
5 And when Jesus came to the place, he looked up, and  
saw him, and said unto him, Zaccheus, make haste,  
and come down ; for to-day I must abide at thy house.  
6 And he made haste, and came down, and received  
7 him joyfully. And when they saw it, they all mur-  
mured, saying, That he was gone to be guest with  
8 a man that is a sinner. And Zaccheus stood, and  
said unto the Lord, Behold, Lord, the half of my  
goods I give to the poor ; and if I have taken any-  
thing from any man by false accusation, I restore  
9 him four-fold. And Jesus said unto him, This day

is salvation come to this house, forasmuch as he  
Lk.1910. also is a son of Abraham. For the Son of man is  
come to seek and to save that which was lost.

- 11 And, as they heard these things, he added, and  
spake a parable, because he was nigh to Jerusalem,  
and because they thought that the kingdom of God  
12 should immediately appear. He said, therefore, A  
certain nobleman went into a far country to receive  
13 for himself a kingdom, and to return. And he  
called his ten servants, and delivered them ten  
pounds, and said unto them, Occupy till I come.  
14 But his citizens hated him, and sent a messenger  
after him, saying, We will not have this man to  
15 reign over us. And it came to pass, that when he  
was returned, having received the kingdom, then he  
commanded these servants to be called unto him, to  
whom he had given the money, that he might know  
16 how much every man had gained by trading. Then  
came the first, saying, Lord, thy pound hath gained  
17 ten pounds. And he said unto him, Well, thou  
good servant; because thou hast been faithful in  
a very little, have thou authority over ten cities.  
18 And the second came, saying, Lord, thy pound hath  
19 gained five pounds. And he said likewise to him,  
20 Be thou also over five cities. And another came,  
saying, Lord, behold, here is thy pound, which I  
21 have kept laid up in a napkin: for I feared thee,  
because thou art an austere man; thou takest up  
that thou layedst not down, and reapest that thou  
22 didst not sow. And he saith unto him, Out of

thine own mouth will I judge thee, thou wicked servant. Thou knewest that I was an austere man, taking up that I laid not down, and reaping that I  
 Lk.19.23 did not sow : wherefore then gavest not thou my money into the bank, that at my coming I might  
 24 have required mine own with usury ? And he said unto them that stood by, Take from him the pound,  
 25 and give it to him that hath ten pounds. (And they said unto him, Lord, he hath ten pounds.)  
 26 For I say unto you, That unto every one which hath shall be given ; and from him that hath not, even that he hath shall be taken away from him.  
 27 But those mine enemies, which would not that I should reign over them, bring hither, and slay them before me.

---

## CHAPTER LIV.

*Christ rides into Jerusalem in triumph—Children praise him in the temple.*

28 AND when he had thus spoken, he went before, ascending up to Jerusalem.  
 Jn.11.55 And the Jews' passover was nigh at hand ; and many went out of the country up to Jerusalem,  
 56 before the passover, to purify themselves. Then sought they for Jesus, and spake among themselves, as they stood in the temple, What think ye ? that  
 57 he will not come to the feast ? Now both the chief priests and the Pharisees had given a com-

mandment, that if any man knew where he were, he should show it, that they might take him.

Jn.12.1 Then Jesus, six days before the passover, came to Bethany, where Lazarus was, which had been dead, 9 whom he raised from the dead. Much people of the Jews, therefore, knew that he was there; and they came, not for Jesus' sake only, but that they might see Lazarus also, whom he had raised from 10 the dead. But the chief priests consulted, that 11 they might put Lazarus also to death; because that by reason of him many of the Jews went away, and believed on Jesus.

Mt. 21 On the next day, when they drew nigh unto Jeru-  
1—17  
& salem, and were come to Bethphage and Bethany, at  
Mk.11. the Mount of Olives, Jesus sent two of his disci-  
1—11  
& ples, saying unto them, Go into the village over  
Lk.19. against you, and straightway ye shall find an ass tied,  
29—44 and a colt with her, whereon never man sat; loose  
& them and bring them to me. And if any man say  
Jn.12. aught unto you, ye shall say, The Lord hath need  
12—19 of them, and straightway he will send them. And the disciples went, and found them tied by the door without, in a place where two ways met; and, as they were loosing them, the owners thereof said unto them, What do ye, loosing the colt? And they said unto them, The Lord hath need of them, even as Jesus commanded. And they let them go; and they brought them to Jesus; and they cast their garments upon the colt, and they sat Jesus thereon.

All this was done that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet,\* saying, Tell ye the daughter of Zion, Behold, thy king cometh unto thee, meek, and sitting upon an ass, and a colt the foal of an ass. And many spread their garments in the way; and others cut down branches off the trees and strewed them in the way. And much people that were come to the feast, when they heard that Jesus was coming to Jerusalem, took branches of palm-trees and went forth to meet him. And the whole multitude of the disciples began to rejoice and praise God with a loud voice for all the mighty works that they had seen. And the multitudes that went before, and they that followed, cried, saying, Hosanna to the Son of David. Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord. Blessed be the kingdom of our father David that cometh in the name of the Lord. Hosanna in the highest.

Jn. These things understood not his disciples at the  
 12.16 first; but when Jesus was glorified, then remembered they that these things were written of him, and that they had done these things unto him.  
 17 The people, therefore, that was with him when he called Lazarus out of his grave, and raised him  
 18 from the dead, bare record. For this cause the people also met him, for that they heard that he  
 19 had done this miracle. The Pharisees, therefore, said among themselves, Perceive ye how ye prevail

\* Zech. 9 : 9.



nothing? Behold, the world is gone after him.  
Lk. And some of the Pharisees from among the multi-  
19.39 tude said unto him, Master, rebuke thy disciples.  
40 And he answered and said unto them, I tell you,  
that if these should hold their peace, the stones  
would immediately cry out.

41 And when he was come near, he beheld the city,  
42 and wept over it, saying, If thou hadst known, even  
thou, at least in this thy day, the things which  
belong unto thy peace! but now they are hid from  
43 thine eyes. For the days shall come upon thee,  
that thine enemies shall cast a trench about thee,  
and compass thee round, and keep thee in on every  
44 side, and shall lay thee even with the ground, and  
thy children within thee; and they shall not leave  
in thee one stone upon another; because thou knew-  
est not the time of thy visitation.

Mt. And when he was come into Jerusalem, all the  
21.10 city was moved, saying, Who is this? And the  
11 multitude said, This is Jesus the prophet of Naza-  
reth of Galilee. And he entered into the temple.  
14 And the blind and the lame came to him, and he  
15 healed them. And when the chief priests and  
scribes saw the wonderful things that he did, and  
the children crying in the temple, and saying,  
Hosanna to the Son of David; they were sore  
16 displeased, and said unto him, Hearest thou what  
these say? And Jesus saith unto them, Yea; have  
ye never read, Out of the mouth of babes and suck-  
lings thou hast perfected praise?



Mk. And when he had looked round about upon all  
 11.11 things, and now the even tide was come, he left  
 Mt.21.17 them, and went out of the city into Bethany; and  
 he lodged there.

## CHAPTER LV.

*The barren fig-tree — Christ casts out those that sold doves, &c. — Asks from whence was the baptism of John — The two sons ordered into the vineyard — The vineyard let out to wicked husbandmen.*

Mt. Now in the morning, when they were come from  
 21.18 & Bethany, he was hungry; and, seeing a fig-tree afar  
 Mk. off, having leaves, he came, if haply he might find  
 11.12 anything thereon; and, when he came to it, he  
 found nothing but leaves; for the time of figs was  
 14 not yet. And Jesus answered and said unto it, No  
 man eat fruit of thee hereafter forever. And his  
 disciples heard it.

15 And they come to Jerusalem: and Jesus went into  
 the temple, and began to cast out them that sold and  
 bought in the temple, and overthrew the tables of the  
 money-changers, and the seats of them that sold doves;  
 16 and would not suffer that any man should carry any  
 17 vessel through the temple, saying unto them, It is  
 written, My house shall be called of all nations the  
 house of prayer;\* but ye have made it a den of  
 18 thieves.† And the scribes and chief priests heard

\* Is. 56 : 7.

† Jer. 7 : 11.

it, and sought how they might destroy him, but  
 Lk. could not find what they might do ; for they feared  
 19.48 him, because all the people were attentive to hear  
 Mk. him. And when even was come he went out of the  
 11.19 city and in the day-time he was teaching in the  
 Lk. temple, and at night he went out, and abode in the  
 21.37 mount that is called the Mount of Olives. And all  
 38 the people came early in the morning to him in the  
 temple, for to hear him.

Mk. And in the morning, as they passed by, they saw  
 11.20 the fig-tree dried up from the roots. And when the  
 Mt. disciples saw it, they marvelled, saying, How soon  
 21.20 is the fig-tree withered away ! And Peter calling to  
 Mk. remembrance, saith unto him, Master, behold the  
 11.21 fig-tree which thou cursedst is withered away.

22 And Jesus answering, saith unto them, Have faith  
 Mt. in God. For verily I say unto you, If ye have  
 21.21 faith, and doubt not, ye shall not only do this  
 which is done to the fig-tree, but also, if ye shall  
 Mk. say unto this mountain, Be thou removed, and be  
 11.23 thou cast into the sea ; and shall not doubt in your  
 heart, but shall believe that those things which ye  
 24 say shall come to pass, it shall be done. Therefore,  
 I say unto you, What things soever ye desire when  
 ye pray, believe that ye receive them, and ye shall  
 25 have them. And when ye stand praying, forgive  
 if ye have aught against any ; that your Father  
 also which is in heaven may forgive you.

Mt. 21. And they come again to Jerusalem ; and, as he  
 23—27 taught the people and preached the gospel in the

& temple, there came to him the chief priests, and the  
Mk.11. scribes, and the elders, saying unto him, Tell us by  
27—33 & what authority doest thou these things? and who  
Lk.20. gave thee this authority to do these things? And  
1—8 Jesus answered and said unto them, I will also  
ask of you one question, which, if ye tell me, I  
will tell you by what authority I do these things.  
The baptism of John, whence was it; from heaven,  
or of men? answer me. And they reasoned with  
themselves, saying, If we shall say, From heaven;  
he will say, Why, then, did ye not believe him?  
But if we shall say, Of men, all the people will  
stone us; for all men counted John, that he was a  
prophet indeed. And they answered and said unto  
Jesus, We cannot tell. And he said unto them,  
Neither tell I you by what authority I do these  
Mt. things.

21.28 But what think ye? A certain man had two  
sons; and he came to the first, and said, Son, go  
29 work to-day in my vineyard. He answered and  
said, I will not; but afterward he repented, and  
30 went. And he came to the second, and said like-  
wise. And he answered and said, I go, sir; and  
31 went not. Whether of them twain did the will of  
his father? They say unto him, The first. Jesus  
saith unto them, Verily I say unto you, that the  
publicans and the harlots go into the kingdom of  
32 God before you. For John came unto you in the  
way of righteousness, and ye believed him not;  
but the publicans and the harlots believed him;

and ye, when ye had seen it, repented not afterward, that ye might believe him.

Mt. Hear another parable: There was a certain  
21.33 householder, which planted a vineyard, and hedged it round about, and digged a wine-press in it, and built a tower, and let it out to husbandmen, and  
34 went into a far country. And, when the time of the fruit drew near, he sent his servant to the husbandmen, that he might receive the fruits of it.

k.12.3 And they caught him, and beat him, and sent him  
4 away empty. And again he sent unto them another servant; and at him they cast stones, and wounded him in the head, and sent him away shamefully  
5 handled. And again he sent another; and him they killed, and many others; beating some, and  
Lk. killing some. Then said the lord of the vineyard,  
20.13

Mk.12.6 What shall I do? And having yet one son, his well-beloved, *he said*, I will send my beloved son; it may be they will reverence him when they see  
Mt. him. But when the husbandmen saw the son, they  
21.38 said among themselves, This is the heir, come, let us kill him, and let us seize on his inheritance.  
39 And they caught him, and cast him out of the vine-  
40 yard, and slew him. When the lord, therefore, of the vineyard cometh, what will he do unto those  
41 husbandmen? They say unto him, He will miserably destroy those wicked men, and will let out his vineyard unto other husbandmen, which shall render  
42 him the fruits in their seasons. Jesus saith unto them, Did ye never read in the Scriptures,\* The

\* Ps. 118 : 22, 23.

stone which the builders rejected, the same is become the head of the corner; this is the Lord's doing, and it is marvellous in our eyes? Therefore  
Mt. 21.43 say I unto you, The kingdom of God shall be taken from you, and given to a nation bringing forth the  
44 fruits thereof. And whosoever shall fall on this stone, shall be broken; but on whomsoever it shall  
45 fall, it will grind him to powder. And when the chief priests and Pharisees had heard his parables,  
46 they perceived that he spake against them. But when they sought to lay hands on him, they feared the multitude, because they took him for a prophet.

---

## CHAPTER LVI.

*The marriage-supper of the king's son — Christ is questioned whether it be lawful to pay tribute to Cæsar — The seven brethren who had one wife.*

Mt. 22.1 AND Jesus answered and spake unto them again  
2 by parables, and said, The kingdom of heaven is like unto a certain king, which made a marriage  
3 for his son, and sent forth his servants to call them that were bidden to the wedding; and they would  
4 not come. Again he sent forth other servants, saying, Tell them which are bidden, Behold, I have prepared my dinner; my oxen and my fatlings are killed, and all things are ready; come unto the  
5 marriage. But they made light of it, and went their ways, one to his farm, another to his merchan-



Mt. 22. 6 dise : and the remnant took his servants, and en-  
 7 treated them spitefully, and slew them. But when  
 the king heard thereof, he was wroth ; and he sent  
 forth his armies and destroyed those murderers, and  
 8 burned up their city. Then saith he to his servants,  
 The wedding is ready, but they which were bidden  
 9 were not worthy. Go ye therefore into the high-  
 ways, and as many as ye shall find, bid to the  
 10 marriage. So those servants went out into the  
 highways, and gathered together all, as many as  
 they found, both bad and good ; and the wedding  
 was furnished with guests.

11 And when the king came in to see the guests, he  
 saw there a man which had not on a wedding gar-  
 12 ment ; and he saith unto him, Friend, how camest  
 thou in hither, not having a wedding garment ? And  
 13 he was speechless. Then saith the king to the ser-  
 vants, Bind him hand and foot, and take him away,  
 and cast him into outer darkness ; there shall be  
 14 weeping and gnashing of teeth. For many are  
 called, but few are chosen.

Mt. 22. Then went the Pharisees and took counsel how  
 15—33 they might entangle him in his talk, that they  
 & Mk. 12. might deliver him unto the power and authority of  
 13—17 the governor. And they sent out unto him their  
 & Lk. 20. disciples, with the Herodians, saying, Master, we  
 20—40 know that thou art true, and teachest the way of  
 God in truth, neither carest thou for any man : for  
 thou regardest not the person of men. Tell us,  
 therefore, What thinkest thou ? Is it lawful to



give tribute unto Cæsar, or not ? Shall we give, or shall we not give ? But Jesus perceived their wickedness, and said, Why tempt ye me, ye hypocrites ? Show me the tribute-money, that I may see it. And they brought unto him a penny. And he saith unto them, Whose is this image and superscription ? They say unto him, Cæsar's. Then saith he unto them, Render, therefore, unto Cæsar the things which are Cæsar's ; and unto God the things that are God's. When they had heard these words, they marvelled at his answer ; and could not take hold of his words before the people, *but* held their peace, and left him, and went their way. The same day came to him the Sadducees, which say that there is no resurrection, and asked him, saying, Master, Moses wrote unto us ; If a man die, having no children, his brother shall marry his wife, and raise up seed unto his brother.\* Now there were with us seven brethren, and the first took a wife, and died without children. And the second took her to wife, and he died childless. And the third took her ; and in like manner the seven also : and they left no children, and died. Last of all the woman died also. Therefore, in the resurrection, whose wife of them shall she be ? for the seven had her to wife. And Jesus answering, said unto them, Ye do err, not knowing the Scriptures nor the power of God. The children of this world marry, and are given in marriage : but they which shall be accounted worthy to obtain that

\* Deut. 25 : 5, 6.

world and the resurrection from the dead, neither marry, nor are given in marriage : neither can they die any more : for they are equal unto the angels ; and are the children of God, being the children of the resurrection. But, as touching the resurrection of the dead, have ye not read that which was spoken unto you by God, saying, I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob ? God is not the God of the dead, but of the living. Ye therefore do greatly err. And when the multitude heard this, they were astonished at his doctrine. Then certain of the scribes answering, said, Master, thou hast well said.

## CHAPTER LVII.

*A Pharisee lawyer asks which is the greatest commandment—Christ asks what they think of the Messiah—Condemns the Scribes and Pharisees as hypocrites.*

Mt. BUT when the Pharisees had heard that he had  
22.34 put the Sadducees to silence, they were gathered  
35 together. Then one of them, which was a lawyer,  
asked him a question, tempting him, and saying,  
36 Master, which is the great commandment in the  
Mk. law ? And Jesus answered him, The first of all the  
12.29 commandments is,\* Hear, O Israel ! The Lord our  
30 God is one Lord. And thou shalt love the Lord thy  
God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and  
with all thy mind, and with all thy strength. This

\* Deut. 6 : 4, 5.

Mk. 12.31 is the first commandment. And the second is like

Mt. 22.40 unto it,\* Thou shalt love thy neighbor as thyself.

On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets. There is none other commandment

32 greater than these. And the scribe said unto him,

Well, Master, thou hast said the truth : for there  
33 is one God ; and there is none other but he : and  
to love him with all the heart, and with all the  
understanding, and with all the soul, and with all  
the strength, and to love his neighbor as himself, is  
more than all whole burnt offerings and sacrifices.

34 And when Jesus saw that he answered discreetly,  
he said unto him, Thou art not far from the king-  
dom of God.

Mt. 22.41 While the Pharisees were gathered together, Je-  
sus asked them, saying, What think ye of Christ ?

whose son is he ? They say unto him, The son of  
43 David. He saith unto them, How then doth David  
in spirit call him Lord, saying, in the book of  
44 Psalms, The Lord said unto my Lord, Sit thou on  
my right hand, till I make thine enemies thy foot-  
45 stool ? If David then call him Lord, how is he  
46 his son ? And no man was able to answer him a  
word, neither durst any man from that day forth  
ask him any more questions.

Mt. 23.1 Then spake Jesus to the multitude, and to his  
2 disciples, saying, The scribes and the Pharisees sit  
3 in Moses' seat. All therefore whatsoever they bid  
you observe, that observe and do ; but beware of

*them*, and do not ye after their works : for they  
Mt. 23.4 say, and do not. For they bind heavy burdens and  
grievous to be borne, and lay them on men's shoulders ; but they themselves will not move them with  
5 one of their fingers. But all their works they do  
for to be seen of men : they make broad their phylacteries, and enlarge the borders of their garments,\*  
6 and love the uppermost rooms at feasts, and the  
7 chief seats in the synagogues, and greetings in the  
markets, and to be called of men, Rabbi, Rabbi.  
8 But be not ye called Rabbi ; for one is your Master,  
9 even Christ, and all ye are brethren. And call no  
man your father upon the earth ; for one is your  
10 Father, which is in heaven. Neither be ye called  
masters : for one is your Master, even Christ.  
11 But he that is greatest among you shall be your  
12 servant. And whosoever shall exalt himself shall  
be abased ; and he that shall humble himself shall  
be exalted.  
13 But woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites ! for ye shut up the kingdom of heaven  
against men : for ye neither go in yourselves,  
neither suffer ye them that are entering to go in.  
14 Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites !  
for ye devour widows' houses, and for a pretence  
make long prayer : therefore ye shall receive the  
15 greater damnation. Woe unto you, scribes and  
Pharisees, hypocrites ! for ye compass sea and land  
to make one proselyte ; and when he is made, ye

\* Numb. 15 : 38, 39.

Mt. make him two-fold more the child of hell than your-  
23.16 selves. Woe unto you, ye blind guides! which  
say, Whosoever shall swear by the temple, it is  
nothing: but whosoever shall swear by the gold of  
17 the temple, he is a debtor. Ye fools, and blind!  
for whether is greater, the gold, or the temple that  
18 sanctifieth the gold? And whosoever shall swear  
by the altar, it is nothing: but whosoever swear-  
19 eth by the gift that is upon it, he is guilty. Ye  
fools, and blind! for whether is greater, the gift,  
20 or the altar that sanctifieth the gift? Whoso,  
therefore, shall swear by the altar, sweareth by it,  
21 and by all things thereon. And whoso shall swear  
by the temple, sweareth by it, and by him that  
22 dwelleth therein. And he that shall swear by  
heaven, sweareth by the throne of God, and by him  
23 that sitteth thereon. Woe unto you, scribes and  
Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye pay tithe of mint,  
and anise, and cummin, and have omitted the  
weightier matters of the law, judgment, mercy, and  
faith: these ought ye to have done, and not to  
24 leave the other undone. Ye blind guides! which  
25 strain at a gnat, and swallow a camel. Woe unto  
you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye make  
clean the outside of the cup and of the platter, but  
26 within they are full of extortion and excess. Thou  
blind Pharisee! cleanse first that which is within  
the cup and platter, that the outside of them may  
27 be clean also. Woe unto you, scribes and Phari-  
sees, hypocrites! for ye are like unto whited sepul-



chres, which indeed appear beautiful outward, but  
Mt. are within full of dead men's bones, and of all  
23.23 uncleanness. Even so ye also outwardly appear  
righteous unto men, but within, ye are full of hy-  
29 pocrisy and iniquity. Woe unto you, scribes and  
Pharisees, hypocrites ! because ye build the tombs  
of the prophets, and garnish the sepulchres of the  
30 righteous, and say, If we had been in the days of  
our fathers, we would not have been partakers with  
31 them in the blood of the prophets. Wherefore ye  
be witnesses unto yourselves, that ye are the chil-  
32 dren of them which killed the prophets. Fill ye  
33 up then the measure of your fathers. Ye serpents,  
ye generation of vipers ! how can ye escape the  
damnation of hell ?

34 Wherefore, behold, I send unto you prophets,  
and wise men, and scribes : and some of them ye  
shall kill and crucify ; and some of them shall ye  
scourge in your synagogues, and persecute them  
35 from city to city : that upon you may come all the  
righteous blood shed upon the earth, from the blood  
of righteous Abel unto the blood of Zechariah, son  
of Barachiah, whom ye slew between the temple  
36 and the altar.\* Verily I say unto you, All these  
37 things shall come upon this generation. O Jerusa-  
lem, Jerusalem, thou that killest the prophets, and  
stonest them which are sent unto thee : how often  
would I have gathered thy children together, even  
as a hen gathereth her chickens under her wings,

\* Gen. 4 : 8 ; 2 Chron. 24 : 20—22.



Mt. and ye would not ! Behold, your house is left  
 23.38  
 39 unto you desolate. For I say unto you, Ye shall  
 not see me henceforth, till ye shall say, Blessed is  
 he that cometh in the name of the Lord.

## CHAPTER LVIII.

*The widow's mite—Greeks inquire after Jesus—Christ  
 teaches concerning himself.*

Mk. AND Jesus sat over against the treasury, and  
 12.41 beheld how the people cast money into the treas-  
 42 ury : and many that were rich, cast in much. And  
 there came a certain poor widow, and she threw in  
 43 two mites, which make a farthing. And he called  
 Lk. 21.3 his disciples, and saith unto them, Of a truth I say  
 unto you, that this poor widow hath cast in more  
 4 than they all : for all these have of their abundance  
 cast in unto the offerings of God : but she of her  
 Jn. penury hath cast in all the living that she had.  
 12.20 And there were certain Greeks among them, that  
 21 came up to worship at the feast : the same came,  
 therefore, to Philip, which was of Bethsaida of Gal-  
 ilee, and desired him, saying, Sir, we would see  
 22 Jesus. Philip cometh and telleth Andrew ; and  
 again, Andrew and Philip tell Jesus.  
 23 And Jesus answered them, saying, The hour is  
 come that the Son of man should be glorified.  
 24 Verily, verily, I say unto you, Except a corn of  
 wheat fall into the ground and die, it abideth  
 alone : but if it die, it bringeth forth much fruit.

Jn.12.25 He that loveth his life, shall lose it; and he that  
hateth his life in this world, shall keep it unto life  
26 eternal. If any man serve me, let him follow me;  
and where I am, there shall also my servant be;  
if any man serve me, him will my Father honor.  
27 Now is my soul troubled; and what shall I say?  
Father, save me from this hour; but for this cause  
28 came I unto this hour. Father, glorify thy name.  
Then came there a voice from heaven, saying, I  
have both glorified it, and will glorify it again.  
29 The people, therefore, that stood by, and heard it,  
said, That it thundered; others said, An angel  
30 spake to him. Jesus answered and said, This voice  
came not, because of me, but for your sakes.  
31 Now is the judgment of this world; now shall the  
32 prince of this world be cast out. And I, if I be  
lifted up from the earth, will draw all men unto me.  
33 This he said, signifying what death he should die.  
34 The people answered him, We have heard out of  
the law, that Christ abideth forever;\* and how  
sayest thou, The Son of man must be lifted up?  
35 Who is this Son of man? Then Jesus said unto  
them, Yet a little while is the light with you; walk  
while ye have the light, lest darkness come upon  
you; for he that walketh in darkness, knoweth not  
36 whither he goeth. While ye have light, believe in  
the light, that ye may be the children of light.  
44 Jesus cried, and said, He that believeth on me, be-  
45 lieveth not on me, but on him that sent me. And he

\* 2 Sam. 7 : 13.

Jn.12.46 that seeth me, seeth him that sent me. I am come  
a light into the world, that whosoever believeth on  
47 me should not abide in darkness. And if any man  
hear my words, and believe not, I judge him not;  
for I came not to judge the world, but to save the  
48 world. He that rejecteth me, and receiveth not my  
words, hath one that judgeth him; the word that I  
have spoken, the same shall judge him in the last day.  
49 For I have not spoken of myself; but the Father  
which sent me, he gave me a commandment, what I  
50 should say, and what I should speak. And I know  
that his commandment is life everlasting; whatso-  
ever I speak, therefore, even as the Father said  
36 unto me, so I speak. These things spake Jesus,  
and departed, and did hide himself from them.

37 But though he had done so many miracles before  
38 them, yet they believed not on him; that the say-  
ing of Isaiah the prophet might be fulfilled, which  
he spake, Lord, who hath believed our report? and  
to whom hath the arm of the Lord been revealed? \*  
39 Therefore they could not believe, because that Isaiah  
40 said again, He hath blinded their eyes, and hard-  
ened their heart; that they should not see with  
their eyes, nor understand with their heart, and be  
41 converted, and I should heal them.† These things  
said Isaiah, when he saw his glory, and spake of  
him.

42 Nevertheless, among the chief rulers also many  
believed on him; but because of the Pharisees, they

\* Is. 53: 1.

† Is. 6: 9, 10.

did not confess him, lest they should be put out of  
43 the synagogue; for they loved the praise of men  
more than the praise of God.

## CHAPTER LIX.

*The disciples call his attention to the temple — He prophesies the destruction of the Jewish polity.*

Mt.24.1 AND, as Jesus went out, and departed from the  
temple, his disciples came to him, for to show him  
Mk.13.1 the buildings of the temple; and saith unto him,  
Master, see what manner of stones, and what build-  
Mt.24.2 ings are here. And Jesus said unto them, See ye  
not all these things? Verily I say unto you,  
There shall not be left here one stone upon another,  
that shall not be thrown down.

3 And, as he sat upon the Mount of Olives, over  
against the temple, the disciples came unto him pri-  
vately, saying, Tell us, when shall these things be?  
and what shall be the sign of thy coming, and of  
4 the end of the world? And Jesus answered and  
said unto them, Take heed that no man deceive  
5 you. For many shall come in my name, saying, I  
6 am Christ; and shall deceive many. And ye shall  
hear of wars, and rumors of wars; see that ye be  
not troubled; for all these things must come to  
7 pass, but the end is not yet. For nation shall rise  
Lk. against nation, and kingdom against kingdom.  
21.11 And great earthquakes shall be in divers places,

Lk. and famines, and pestilences; and fearful sights  
 21.12 and great signs shall there be from heaven. But  
 before all these, they shall lay their hands on you,  
 and persecute you, delivering you up to the syna-  
 gogues, and into prisons, being brought before  
 13 kings and rulers for my name's sake. And it shall  
 14 turn to you for a testimony against them. Settle  
 it, therefore, in your hearts, not to meditate before,  
 15 what ye shall answer; for I will give you a mouth  
 and wisdom, which all your adversaries shall not be  
 17 able to gainsay nor resist. And ye shall be be-  
 trayed both by parents, and brethren, and kinsfolks,  
 Mt.24.9 and friends; *and* they shall deliver you up to be  
 Lk. afflicted, and some of you shall they cause to be put  
 21.16 to death; and ye shall be hated of all nations for  
 18 my name's sake. But there shall not an hair of  
 19 your head *finally* perish. In your patience possess  
 Mt. ye your souls. And then shall many be offended,  
 24.10. and shall betray one another, and shall hate one  
 11 another. And many false prophets shall rise, and  
 12 shall deceive many. And because iniquity shall  
 13 abound, the love of many shall wax cold. But he  
 that shall endure unto the end, the same shall be  
 14 saved. And this gospel of the kingdom shall be  
 preached in all the world, for a witness unto all  
 15 nations; and then shall the end come. When ye,  
 therefore, shall see the abomination of desolation,  
 spoken of by Daniel\* the prophet, stand in the  
 Mk. holy place, where it ought not (whoso readeth, let

\* Dan. 9 : 27 ; 12 : 11.

Lk.21.20 him understand); and when ye shall see Jerusalem  
 compassed with armies, then know that the desola-  
 21 tion thereof is nigh. Then let them which are in  
 Judea flee to the mountains; and let them which  
 are in the midst of it depart out; and let not them  
 22 that are in the countries enter thereinto. For these  
 be the days of vengeance, that all things which are  
 Mk. written may be fulfilled. Then let him that is on  
 13.15 the house-top not go down into the house, neither  
 enter therein, to take anything out of his house.  
 16 And let him that is in the field, not turn back again  
 Lk.17.32 for to take up his garment. Remember Lot's wife.  
 Lk.21.23 But woe unto them that are with child, and to them  
 that give suck in those days! for there shall be  
 great distress in the land, and wrath upon this peo-  
 24 ple. And they shall fall by the edge of the sword,  
 Mt.24.20 and shall be led away captive into all nations. But  
 pray ye that your flight be not in the winter, neither  
 21 on the Sabbath-day; for then shall be great tribu-  
 lation, such as was not since the beginning of the  
 22 world to this time, no, nor ever shall be. And ex-  
 cept those days should be shortened, there should  
 no flesh be saved; but for the elect's sake those  
 Lk. days shall be shortened; but Jerusalem shall be  
 21.24 trodden down of the Gentiles, until the times of  
 Mt. 24.23 the Gentiles be fulfilled. Then if any man shall  
 say unto you, Lo, here is Christ, or there; believe  
 24 it not. For there shall arise false Christs, and  
 false prophets, and shall show great signs and won-  
 ders; insomuch, that, if it were possible, they



Mt. 24.25 shall deceive the very elect. Behold, I have told  
 26 you before. Wherefore, if they shall say unto you,  
 Behold, he is in the desert; go not forth: Behold,  
 27 he is in the secret chambers; believe it not. For,  
 as the lightning cometh out of the east, and shineth  
 even unto the west, so shall also the coming of  
 17.25 the Son of man be. But first must he suffer many  
 things, and be rejected of this generation.

## CHAPTER LX.

*Christ foretells the destruction of Jerusalem and the  
 final dissolution — The ten virgins.*

Mt. IMMEDIATELY after the tribulation of those days  
 24.29 shall the sun be darkened, and the moon shall not  
 give her light, and the stars shall fall from heaven,  
 and the powers of the heavens shall be shaken;  
 Lk. and upon the earth distress of nations, with per-  
 21.25 plexity; the sea and the waves roaring; men's  
 26 hearts failing them for fear, and for looking after  
 Mt. those things which are coming on the earth; and  
 24.30 then shall appear the sign of the Son of man in  
 heaven; and then shall all the tribes of the earth  
 mourn, and they shall see the Son of man coming  
 in the clouds of heaven with power and great glory.  
 31 And he shall send his angels with a great sound of  
 a trumpet, and they shall gather together his elect  
 Mk. from the four winds, from the uttermost part of  
 13.27 the earth to the uttermost part of heaven. And  
 Lk. the earth to the uttermost part of heaven. And  
 21.28 when these things begin to come to pass, then look

up, and lift up your heads ; for your redemption draweth nigh.

Mt. Now learn a parable of the fig-tree : When his  
 24.32 branch is yet tender, and putteth forth leaves, ye  
 33 know that summer is nigh ; so likewise ye, when ye  
 shall see all these things come to pass, know that  
 the kingdom of God is near, even at the doors.  
 34 Verily I say unto you, This generation shall not  
 35 pass, till all these things be fulfilled. Heaven and  
 earth shall pass away, but my words shall not pass  
 away.

36 But of that day and hour knoweth no man ; no,  
 not the angels of heaven, neither the Son, but my  
 37 Father only. But as the days of Noah were,\* so  
 38 shall also the coming of the Son of man be. For  
 as in the days that were before the flood, they were  
 eating and drinking, marrying and giving in mar-  
 riage, until the day that Noah entered into the ark,  
 39 and knew not until the flood came, and took them  
 Lk. all away. Likewise, also, as it was in the days of  
 17.28 Lot, they did eat, they drank, they bought, they  
 29 sold, they planted, they builded ; but the same day  
 that Lot went out of Sodom, it rained fire and  
 brimstone from heaven, and destroyed them all.†  
 34 I tell you, In that night there shall be two men in  
 one bed ; the one shall be taken, and the other shall  
 35 be left. Two women shall be grinding together at  
 the mill ; the one shall be taken, and the other  
 36 left. Two men shall be in the field ; the one shall

\* Gen. 6 : 5—8 ; 7 : 21, 22. † Gen. 19 : 22, 25.

Lk. be taken, and the other left. And they answered  
17.37 and said unto him, Where, Lord? And he said  
unto them, Wheresoever the body is, thither will  
the eagles be gathered together.

Lk. And take heed to yourselves, lest at any time  
21.34 your hearts be overcharged with surfeiting, and  
drunkenness, and cares of this life, and so that day  
35 come upon you unawares. For as a snare shall it  
come on all them that dwell on the face of the

Mk. whole earth. For the Son of man is as a man  
13.34 taking a far journey, who left his house, and gave  
authority to his servants, and to every man his  
35 work, and commanded the porter to watch. Watch  
ye, therefore, for ye know not when the master of the  
house cometh, at even, or at midnight, or at the cock-  
36 crowing, or in the morning; lest, coming suddenly,

Lk. he find you sleeping. Watch ye, therefore, and  
21.36 pray always, that ye may be accounted worthy to  
escape all these things that shall come to pass, and

Mt. to stand before the Son of man. But know this,  
24.43 that if the good man of the house had known in  
what watch the thief would come, he would have  
watched, and would not have suffered his house to

44 be broken up. Therefore be ye also ready; for in  
such an hour as ye think not, the Son of man

Mk. cometh. And what I say unto you, I say unto all,  
13.37 Watch.

Mt.25.1 Then shall the kingdom of heaven be likened  
unto ten virgins, which took their lamps, and went  
2 forth to meet the bridegroom. And five of them

Mt.25.3 were wise, and five were foolish. They that were foolish took their lamps, and took no oil with them ;  
4 but the wise took oil in their vessels with their  
5 lamps. While the bridegroom tarried, they all  
6 slumbered and slept. And at midnight there was  
a cry made, Behold, the bridegroom cometh ; go ye  
7 out to meet him. Then all those virgins arose, and  
8 trimmed their lamps. And the foolish said unto  
the wise, Give us of your oil ; for our lamps are  
9 gone out. But the wise answered, saying, Not so ;  
lest there be not enough for us and you ; but go ye  
rather to them that sell, and buy for yourselves.  
10 And while they went to buy, the bridegroom came ;  
and they that were ready went in with him to the  
11 marriage ; and the door was shut. Afterward came  
also the other virgins, saying, Lord, Lord, open to  
12 us. But he answered and said, Verily I say unto  
13 you, I know you not. Watch, therefore, for ye  
know neither the day nor the hour wherein the Son  
of man cometh.

---

## CHAPTER LXI.

*The parable of the talents — The sheep and the goats.*

Mt. 25.14 FOR the kingdom of heaven is as a man travel-  
ling into a far country, who called his own servants,  
15 and delivered unto them his goods. And unto one  
he gave five talents, to another two, and to another  
one ; to every man according to his several ability ;

<sup>Mt.</sup>  
<sup>25.16</sup> and straightway took his journey. Then he that had received the five talents went and traded with the same, and made them other five talents. And likewise he that had received two, he also gained other two. But he that had received one, went and digged in the earth, and hid his lord's money. After a long time the lord of those servants cometh, and reckoneth with them. And so he that had received five talents came, and brought other five talents, saying, Lord, thou deliveredst unto me five talents; behold, I have gained besides them five talents more. His lord said unto him, Well done, thou good and faithful servant; thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things; enter thou into the joy of thy lord. He also that had received two talents came, and said, Lord, thou deliveredst unto me two talents; behold, I have gained two other talents besides them. His lord said unto him, Well done, good and faithful servant: thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things; enter thou into the joy of thy lord. Then he which had received the one talent came, and said, Lord, I knew thee, that thou art a hard man, reaping where thou hast not sown, and gathering where thou hast not strewed; and I was afraid, and went and hid thy talent in the earth; lo, there thou hast that is thine. His lord answered and said unto him, Thou wicked and slothful servant, thou knewest that I reap where I sowed not, and gather

Mt. 25.27 where I have not strewed. Thou oughtest, therefore, to have put my money to the exchangers, and then at my coming I should have received mine own with usury. Take, therefore, the talent from him, and give it unto him which hath ten talents. For unto every one that hath, shall be given, and he shall have abundance; but from him that hath not, shall be taken away even that which he hath. And cast ye the unprofitable servant into outer darkness; there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

31 When the Son of man shall come in his glory, and all the holy angels with him, then shall he sit upon the throne of his glory; and before him shall be gathered all nations; and he shall separate them one from another, as a shepherd divideth his sheep from the goats; and he shall set the sheep on his right hand, but the goats on the left. Then shall the King say unto them on his right hand, Come, ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world; 35 for I was a hungered, and ye gave me meat; I was thirsty, and ye gave me drink; I was a stranger, 36 and ye took me in; naked, and ye clothed me; I was sick, and ye visited me; I was in prison, and 37 ye came unto me. Then shall the righteous answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee a hungered, and fed thee? or thirsty, and gave thee drink? 38 When saw we thee a stranger, and took thee in? 39 or naked, and clothed thee? Or when saw we thee



Mt. 25.40 sick, or in prison, and came unto thee? And the King shall answer, and say unto them, Verily I say unto you, inasmuch as ye have done it unto one of the least of these my brethren, ye have done it unto me.

41 Then shall he say also unto them on the left hand, Depart from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire,

42 prepared for the devil and his angels: for I was a hungered, and ye gave me no meat: I was thirsty,

43 and ye gave me no drink: I was a stranger, and ye took me not in: naked, and ye clothed me not:

44 sick, and in prison, and ye visited me not. Then shall they also answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee a hungered, or athirst, or a stranger, or naked, or sick, or in prison, and did not minister

45 unto thee? Then shall he answer them, saying, Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye did it not to one of the least of these, ye did it not to me.

46 And these shall go away into everlasting punishment; but the righteous into life eternal.

---

## CHAPTER LXII.

*Mary anoints Jesus in the house of Simon the leper — Judas covenants with the chief priests to betray Christ — The disciples strive who shall be greatest — Are reproved by Christ.*

Mt. 26. 1—16 AND it came to pass, when Jesus had finished all these sayings, he said unto his disciples, Ye know

1—11 that after two days is the feast of the passover, and

Jn. 12. 2—6 the Son of man is betrayed to be crucified.

Then assembled together the chief priests, and the scribes, and the elders of the people, unto the palace of the high priest, who was called Caiaphas, and consulted that they might take Jesus by subtlety, and kill him. But they said, Not on the feast-day, lest there be an uproar among the people.

Now when Jesus was in Bethany, in the house of Simon the leper, there they made him a supper, and Martha served; but Lazarus was one of them that sat at the table with him. Then took Mary an alabaster box, *containing* a pound of ointment of spikenard, very precious, and anointed the feet of Jesus, and wiped his feet with her hair; and she brake the box, and poured it on his head; and the house was filled with the odor of the ointment. Then one of his disciples, Judas Iscariot, Simon's son, which should betray him, had indignation within *himself*, and said, Why was this waste of the ointment made? For it might have been sold for more than three hundred pence, and have been given to the poor. This he said, not that he cared for the poor; but because he was a thief, and had the bag, and bare what was put therein. And they murmured against her. Then said Jesus, Let her alone: why trouble ye her? she hath wrought a good work on me. For ye have the poor always with you, and whensoever ye will, ye may do them good; but me ye have not always. She hath done what she could; she is come aforehand to anoint

my body to the burying. Verily I say unto you, Wheresoever this gospel shall be preached in the whole world, there shall also this, that this woman hath done, be told for a memorial of her.

Mt. 26. Then entered Satan into Judas, surnamed Iscariot,  
14—16 being one of the twelve, and he went his way unto  
&

Mk. 14. the chief priests to betray him. And he said unto  
10, 11 them, What will ye give me, and I will deliver him  
&

Lk. 22. unto you? And when they heard it they were glad;  
3—6 and covenanted with him for thirty pieces of silver.

And from that time he sought opportunity to betray him unto them in the absence of the multitude.

Lk. 22.7 Then came the day of unleavened bread, when  
8 the passover must be killed. And he sent Peter  
and John, saying, Go and prepare us the passover,  
9 that we may eat. And they said unto him, Where

10 wilt thou that we prepare? And he said unto  
Mk. 14.13 them, Go ye into the city, and there shall meet  
you a man bearing a pitcher of water: follow him.

14 And wheresoever he shall go in, say ye to the good  
man of the house, the Master saith, Where is the  
guest-chamber, where I shall eat the passover with

15 my disciples? And he will show you a large up-  
per room furnished and prepared: there make ready

16 for us. And his disciples went forth, and came into  
the city, and found as he had said unto them: and

Lk. 22.14 they made ready the passover. And when the hour  
was come, he sat down, and the twelve apostles  
with him.

24 And there was a strife among them, which of

Lk. 22.25 them should be accounted the greatest. And he said unto them, The kings of the Gentiles exercise lordship over them ; and they that exercise authority upon them are called benefactors. But ye shall not be so : but he that is greatest among you, let him be as the younger ; and he that is chief, as he that doth serve. For whether is greater, he that sitteth at meat, or he that serveth ? is not he that sitteth at meat ? but I am among you as he that serveth. Ye are they which have continued with me in my temptations : and I appoint unto you a kingdom, as my Father hath appointed unto me ; that ye may eat and drink at my table in my kingdom, and sit on thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel. And he said unto them, With desire I have desired to eat this passover with you before I suffer : for I say unto you, I will not any more eat thereof, until it be fulfilled in the kingdom of God. And he took the cup, and gave thanks, and said, Take this, and divide it among yourselves.

---

## CHAPTER LXIII.

*Christ washes the disciples' feet — They sit down at the passover — Judas receives the sop and goes out — The supper instituted.*

Jn. 13.1 Now, before the feast of the passover, when Jesus knew that his hour was come that he should depart out of this world unto the Father, having

loved his own which were in the world, he loved  
Jn.13.3 them unto the end. Jesus, knowing that the Father  
had given all things into his hands, and that he was  
4 come from God, and went to God, he riseth from  
supper, and laid aside his garments; and took a  
5 towel, and girded himself. After that, he poureth  
water into a basin, and began to wash the disciples'  
feet, and to wipe them with the towel wherewith he  
6 was girded. Then cometh he to Simon Peter: and  
Peter saith unto him, Lord, dost thou wash my  
7 feet? Jesus answered and said unto him, What I  
do, thou knowest not now; but thou shalt know  
8 hereafter. Peter saith unto him, Thou shalt never  
wash my feet. Jesus answered him, If I wash thee  
9 not thou hast no part with me. Simon Peter saith  
unto him, Lord, not my feet only, but also my hands  
10 and my head. Jesus saith to him, He that is washed,  
needeth not, save to wash his feet, but is clean every  
11 whit: and ye are clean, but not all. For he knew  
who should betray him; therefore said he, Ye are  
12 not all clean. So, after he had washed their feet,  
and had taken his garments, and was set down  
again, he said unto them, Know ye what I have  
13 done to you? Ye call me Master, and Lord: and  
14 ye say well; for so I am. If I then, your Lord  
and Master, have washed your feet, ye also ought  
15 to wash one another's feet. For I have given you  
an example, that ye should do as I have done to  
16 you. Verily, verily, I say unto you, The servant  
is not greater than his lord; neither he that is



<sup>Jn.</sup>  
<sup>13.17</sup> sent, greater than he that sent him. If ye know these things, happy are ye if ye do them.

18 I speak not of you all; I know whom I have chosen: but, that the scripture may be fulfilled, He that eateth bread with me hath lifted up his

19 heel against me.\* Now I tell you before it come, that, when it is come to pass, ye may believe that

20 I am he. Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that receiveth whomsoever I send, receiveth me; and

<sup>Jn.</sup> he that receiveth me, receiveth him that sent me.

<sup>13.21</sup> When Jesus had thus said, as they sat, and did eat,

<sup>&</sup>  
<sup>Mt. 26.</sup> he was troubled in spirit, and testified, and said,

<sup>21—25</sup> Verily I say unto you, that one of you shall betray

me. Then the disciples were exceeding sorrowful,

and looked one on another, doubting of whom he

spake. And began to inquire, *saying*, Lord, is it I?

And another said, Is it I? And he answered and

said unto them, It is one of the twelve, that dippeth

with me in the dish. The Son of man goeth, as it

is written of him: but woe unto that man by whom

the Son of man is betrayed! it had been good for

<sup>Jn.</sup>  
<sup>13.23</sup> that man if he had not been born. Now there was

leaning on Jesus' bosom one of his disciples, whom

24 Jesus loved. Simon Peter, therefore, beckoned to

him, that he should ask who it should be of whom

25 he spake. He then, lying on Jesus' breast, saith

26 unto him, Lord, who is it? Jesus answered, He it

is, to whom I shall give a sop, when I have dipped



it. And when he had dipped the sop, he gave it to  
<sup>Mt.</sup> Judas Iscariot, the son of Simon. Then Judas an-  
<sup>26.25</sup> swered and said, Master, is it I? He said unto  
<sup>Jn.</sup> him, Thou hast said. And after the sop Satan  
<sup>13.27</sup> entered into him. Then said Jesus unto him, That  
28 thou doest, do quickly. Now no man at the table  
29 knew for what intent he spake this unto him. For  
some of them thought, because Judas had the bag,  
that Jesus had said unto him, Buy those things  
that we have need of against the feast : or, that he  
30 should give something to the poor. He then, hav-  
ing received the sop, went immediately out : and it  
was night.

31 Therefore, when he was gone out, Jesus said,  
Now is the Son of man glorified, and God is glori-  
32 fied in him. If God be glorified in him, God shall  
also glorify him in himself, and shall straightway  
33 glorify him. Little children, yet a little while I  
am with you. Ye shall seek me : and, as I said  
unto the Jews, Whither I go ye cannot come ; so  
34 now I say to you. A new commandment I give  
unto you, That ye love one another ; as I have  
35 loved you, that ye also love one another. By this  
shall all men know that ye are my disciples, if ye  
have love one to another.

36 Simon Peter said unto him, Lord, whither goest  
thou? Jesus answered him, Whither I go, thou  
canst not follow me now ; but thou shalt follow me  
37 afterward. Peter said unto him, Lord, why can-  
not I follow thee now? I will lay down my life

Mt. 26. for thy sake. Then saith Jesus unto them, All ye  
 28—35 shall be offended because of me this night ; for it is  
 & Mk. 14. written, I will smite the shepherd, and the sheep  
 20—31 shall be scattered.\* But after I am risen again, I  
 & Lk. 22. will go before you into Galilee. Peter answered  
 19—38 and said unto him, Though all men shall be offended  
 because of thee, yet will I never be offended.

And the Lord said, Simon, Simon, behold, Satan hath desired to have you, that he may sift you as wheat : but I have prayed for thee, that thy faith fail not : and when thou art converted, strengthen thy brethren. And he said unto him, Lord, I am ready to go with thee, both into prison and to death. Jesus said unto him, Verily I say unto thee, That this night, before the cock crow, thou shalt deny me thrice. But he spake the more vehemently, If I should die with thee, I will not deny thee in any wise. Likewise also said all the disciples.

And he said unto them, When I sent you without purse, and scrip, and shoes, lacked ye anything? And they said, Nothing. Then said he unto them, But now, he that hath a purse, let him take it, and likewise his scrip ; and he that hath no sword, let him sell his garment, and buy one. For I say unto you, that this that is written must yet be accomplished in me. And he was reckoned among the transgressors ; † for the things concerning me have an end. And they said, Lord, behold, here are two

\* Zech. 13 : 7.

† Is. 53 : 12.

swords. And he said unto them, It is enough, And, as they did eat, Jesus took bread, and gave thanks, and brake it, and gave unto them, saying, This is my body, which is given for you; this do in remembrance of me. Likewise, also, after supper, he took the cup; and, when he had given thanks, he gave it to them, saying, Drink ye all of it; for this is my blood of the new testament, which is shed for many for the remission of sins. Verily I say unto you, I will drink no more of this fruit of the vine, until that day when I drink it new with you in my Father's kingdom.

---

## CHAPTER LXIV.

*Christ addresses his disciples — The Comforter promised.*

Jn.14.1 *And Jesus said unto them,* Let not your heart  
be troubled; ye believe in God, believe also  
2 in me. In my Father's house are many mansions; if it were not so, I would have told you.  
3 I go to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again and receive you unto myself; that where I am, there ye  
4 may be also. And whither I go ye know, and the  
5 way ye know. Thomas saith unto him, Lord, we know not whither thou goest; and how can we  
6 know the way? Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, and the truth, and the life; no man cometh

Jn.14.7 unto the Father, but by me. If ye had known me, ye should have known my Father also; and from henceforth ye know him, and have seen him.

8 Philip saith unto him, Lord, show us the Father, and it sufficeth us. Jesus saith unto him, Have I been so long time with you, and yet hast thou not known me, Philip? He that hath seen me hath seen the Father; and how sayest thou, then, Show us the Father? Believest thou not that I am in the Father, and the Father in me? The words that I speak unto you, I speak not of myself; but the Father, that dwelleth in me, he doeth the works. 11 Believe me that I am in the Father, and the Father in me; or else believe me for the very works' sake.

12 Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on me, the works that I do, shall he do also, and greater works than these shall he do; because I go 13 unto my Father. And whatsoever ye shall ask in my name, that will I do, that the Father may be 14 glorified in the Son. If ye shall ask anything in my name, I will do it.

15 If ye love me, keep my commandments; and I 16 will pray the Father, and he shall give you another Comforter, that he may abide with you forever. 17 Even the Spirit of truth, whom the world cannot receive, because it seeth him not, neither knoweth him; but ye know him; for he dwelleth with you, 18 and shall be in you. I will not leave you comfort- 19 less; I will come to you. Yet a little while, and

the world seeth me no more; but ye see me; be-  
Jn.14.20 cause I live, ye shall live also. At that day ye  
shall know that I am in my Father, and ye in me,  
21 and I in you. He that hath my commandments,  
and keepeth them, he it is that loveth me; and he  
that loveth me shall be loved of my Father, and I  
will love him, and will manifest myself to him.  
22 Judas saith unto him (not Iscariot), Lord, how is  
it that thou wilt manifest thyself unto us, and not  
23 unto the world? Jesus answered and said unto  
him, If a man love me, he will keep my words;  
and my Father will love him, and we will come  
24 unto him, and make our abode with him. He that  
loveth me not, keepeth not my sayings; and the  
word which ye hear is not mine, but the Father's  
25 which sent me. These things have I spoken unto  
26 you, being yet present with you. But the Comforter,  
which is the Holy Ghost, whom the Father will  
send in my name, he shall teach you all things, and  
bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I  
have said unto you.  
27 Peace I leave with you, my peace I give unto  
you; not as the world giveth, give I unto you. Let  
not your heart be troubled, neither let it be afraid.  
28 Ye have heard how I said unto you, I go away and  
come again unto you. If ye loved me, ye would  
rejoice, because I said, I go unto the Father; for  
29 my Father is greater than I. And now I have told  
you before it come to pass, that, when it is come to  
30 pass, ye might believe. Hereafter I will not talk

much with you; for the prince of this world cometh,  
 31 and hath nothing in me. But that the world may  
 know that I love the Father; and, as the Father  
 gave me commandment, even so I do. Arise, let us  
 go hence.

---

## CHAPTER LXV.

*Christ the vine — The disciples exhorted to love one  
 another — Warned of persecution.*

Jn.15.1 I AM the true vine, and my Father is the hus-  
 2 bandman. Every branch in me that beareth not  
 fruit, he taketh away; and every branch that bear-  
 eth fruit, he purgeth it, that it may bring forth  
 3 more fruit. Now ye are clean through the word  
 4 which I have spoken unto you. Abide in me, and  
 I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself,  
 except it abide in the vine; no more can ye, except  
 5 ye abide in me. I am the vine, ye are the branches;  
 He that abideth in me, and I in him, the same  
 bringeth forth much fruit; for without me ye can  
 6 do nothing. If a man abide not in me, he is cast  
 forth as a branch, and is withered; and men gather  
 them, and cast them into the fire, and they are  
 7 burned. If ye abide in me, and my words abide in  
 you, ye shall ask what ye will, and it shall be done  
 8 unto you. Herein is my Father glorified, that ye  
 9 bear much fruit; so shall ye be my disciples. As  
 the Father hath loved me, so have I loved you;



Jn.15.10 continue ye in my love. If ye keep my commandments, ye shall abide in my love; even as I have kept my Father's commandments, and abide in his love. These things have I spoken unto you, that my joy might remain in you, and that your joy might be full.

12 This is my commandment, That ye love one  
13 another, as I have loved you. Greater love hath  
no man than this, that a man lay down his life for  
14 his friends. Ye are my friends, if ye do whatsoever  
15 I command you. Henceforth I call you not  
servants; for the servant knoweth not what his lord  
doeth; but I have called you friends; for all things  
that I have heard of my Father, I have made  
16 known unto you. Ye have not chosen me, but I  
have chosen you, and ordained you, that ye should  
go and bring forth fruit, and that your fruit should  
remain; that whatsoever ye shall ask of the Father  
17 in my name, he may give it you. These things I  
command you, that ye love one another.

18 If the world hate you, ye know that it hated me  
19 before it hated you. If ye were of the world, the  
world would love his own; but because ye are not  
of the world, but I have chosen you out of the  
20 world, therefore the world hateth you. Remember  
the word that I said unto you, The servant is not  
greater than his lord. If they have persecuted me,  
they will also persecute you; if they have kept my  
21 saying, they will keep yours also. But all these  
things will they do unto you for my name's sake,

Jn.15.22 because they know not him that sent me. If I had not come, and spoken unto them, they had not had  
 23 sin ; but now they have no cloak for their sin. He  
 24 that hateth me, hateth my Father also. If I had not done among them the works which none other man did, they had not had sin ; but now have they  
 25 both seen and hated both me and my Father. But this cometh to pass, that the word might be fulfilled that is written in their law, They hated me without a cause.\*

26 But when the Comforter is come, whom I will send unto you from the Father, even the Spirit of truth, which proceedeth from the Father, he shall  
 27 testify of me ; and ye also shall bear witness, because ye have been with me from the beginning.

---

## CHAPTER LXVI.

*The Comforter's office — Christ further exhorts the disciples.*

Jn.16.1 THESE things have I spoken unto you, that ye  
 2 should not be offended. They shall put you out of the synagogues ; yea, the time cometh, that whosoever killeth you, will think that he doeth God service. And these things will they do unto you, because they have not known the Father, nor me.  
 4 But these things have I told you, that, when the time shall come, ye may remember that I told you

\* Ps. 35 : 19 ; 69 : 4.

of them. And these things I said not unto you at the beginning, because I was with you.

Jn.16.5 But now I go my way to him that sent me ; and none of you asketh me, Whither goest thou ? But 6 because I have said these things unto you, sorrow hath filled your heart. Nevertheless, I tell you the truth : It is expedient for you that I go away ; for, if I go not away, the Comforter will not come unto you ; but, if I depart, I will send him unto 8 you. And, when he is come, he will reprove the world of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgment : of sin ; because they believe not on me : 9 of righteousness ; because I go to my Father, and 10 ye see me no more : of judgment ; because the 11 prince of this world is judged. I have yet many things to say unto you, but ye cannot bear them 12 now. Howbeit, when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he will guide you into all truth ; for he shall not speak of himself ; but whatsoever he shall hear, that shall he speak ; and he will show you things to 13 come. He shall glorify me ; for he shall receive 14 of mine, and shall show it unto you. All things that the Father hath are mine ; therefore said I, that he shall take of mine, and shall show it unto you.

15 A little while, and ye shall not see me ; and again, a little while, and ye shall see me ; because 16 I go to the Father. Then said some of his disciples among themselves, What is this that he saith unto us, A little while, and ye shall not see me ;

and again, a little while, and ye shall see me ; and,  
Jn.16.18 Because I go to the Father ? They said, therefore,  
What is this that he saith, A little while ? We  
19 cannot tell what he saith. Now Jesus knew that  
they were desirous to ask him, and said unto them,  
Do ye inquire among yourselves of that I said, A  
little while, and ye shall not see me ; and again, a  
20 little while, and ye shall see me ? Verily, verily, I  
say unto you, That ye shall weep and lament, but  
the world shall rejoice ; and ye shall be sorrowful,  
21 but your sorrow shall be turned into joy. A  
woman when she is in travail hath sorrow, because  
her hour is come ; but, as soon as she is delivered  
of the child, she remembereth no more the anguish,  
22 for joy that a man is born into the world. And ye  
now, therefore, have sorrow ; but I will see you  
again, and your heart shall rejoice, and your joy no  
23 man taketh from you. And in that day ye shall  
ask me nothing. Verily, verily, I say unto you,  
Whatsoever ye shall ask the Father in my name,  
24 he will give it you. Hitherto have ye asked nothing  
in my name ; ask, and ye shall receive, that  
25 your joy may be full. These things have I spoken  
unto you in proverbs ; but the time cometh when I  
shall no more speak unto you in proverbs, but I  
26 shall show you plainly of the Father. At that day  
ye shall ask in my name ; and I say not unto you,  
27 That I will pray the Father for you ; for the Father  
himself loveth you, because ye have loved me, and  
28 have believed that I came out from God. I came

forth from the Father, and am come into the world ; again, I leave the world, and go to the Father.

Jn.16.29 His disciples said unto him, Lo, now speakest  
30 thou plainly, and speakest no proverb. Now are we sure that thou knowest all things, and needest not that any man should ask thee ; by this we believe  
31 that thou camest forth from God. Jesus answered  
32 them, Do ye now believe ? Behold, the hour cometh, yea, is now come, that ye shall be scattered, every man to his own, and shall leave me alone ; and yet I  
33 am not alone, because the Father is with me. These things I have spoken unto you, that in me ye might have peace. In the world ye shall have tribulation : but be of good cheer ; I have overcome the world.

---

## CHAPTER LXVII.

### *Christ's prayer.*

Jn.17.1 THESE words spake Jesus, and lifted up his eyes to heaven, and said, Father, the hour is come ; glorify thy Son, that thy Son also may glorify thee ;  
2 as thou hast given him power over all flesh, that he should give eternal life to as many as thou hast  
3 given him. And this is life eternal, that they might know thee the only true God, and Jesus  
4 Christ, whom thou hast sent. I have glorified thee on the earth ; I have finished the work which thou  
5 gavest me to do. And now, O Father, glorify thou



me with thine own self, with the glory which I had with thee before the world was.

Jn.17.6 I have manifested thy name unto the men which thou gavest me out of the world; thine they were, and thou gavest them me; and they have kept thy  
7 word. Now they have known that all things what-  
8 soever thou hast given me are of thee; for I have given unto them the words which thou gavest me; and they have received them, and have known surely that I came out from thee, and they have  
9 believed that thou didst send me. I pray for them; I pray not for the world, but for them which thou  
10 hast given me; for they are thine. And all mine are thine, and thine are mine; and I am glorified  
11 in them. And now I am no more in the world, but these are in the world, and I come to thee. Holy Father, keep through thine own name those whom thou hast given me, that they may be one, as we  
12 are. While I was with them in the world, I kept them in thy name; those that thou gavest me I have kept, and none of them is lost but the son of perdition; that the Scripture might be fulfilled.\*  
13 And now come I to thee; and these things I speak in the world, that they might have my joy fulfilled  
14 in themselves. I have given them thy word; and the world hath hated them, because they are not of the world, even as I am not of the world.  
15 I pray not that thou shouldst take them out of the world, but that thou shouldst keep them from

\* Ps. 55 : 12—15 ; 109 : 8—19.



Jn.17.16 the evil. They are not of the world, even as I am not of the world.

17 Sanctify them through thy truth; thy word is  
18 truth. As thou hast sent me into the world, even  
19 so have I also sent them into the world. And for  
their sakes I sanctify myself, that they also might  
be sanctified through the truth.

20 Neither pray I for these alone, but for them also  
which shall believe on me through their word;  
21 that they all may be one; as thou, Father, art in  
me, and I in thee, that they also may be one in us;  
that the world may believe that thou hast sent me.

22 And the glory which thou gavest me I have given  
them; that they may be one, even as we are one;  
23 I in them, and thou in me, that they may be made  
perfect in one; and that the world may know that  
thou hast sent me, and hast loved them as thou hast

24 loved me. Father, I will that they also whom  
thou hast given me be with me where I am; that  
they may behold my glory which thou hast given  
me; for thou lovedst me before the foundation of

25 the world. O righteous Father, the world hath  
not known thee; but I have known thee, and these  
26 have known that thou hast sent me. And I have  
declared unto them thy name, and will declare it;  
that the love wherewith thou hast loved me, may  
be in them, and I in them.

## CHAPTER LXVIII.

*Jesus goes out to the garden of Gethsemane—His prayers and agony—Judas comes with a band—Peter cuts off the ear of the high priest's servant—Christ is led away to Annas, who sends him to Caiaphas.*

Mt. 26. AND when they had sung an hymn, he went forth,  
36—39  
& over the brook Cedron unto the mount of Olives,  
Mk. 14. where was a garden called Gethsemane, into which  
32—36  
& Jesus entered with his disciples. And Judas knew  
Jn. 18.2 the place, for Jesus oftentimes resorted thither with his  
&  
Lk. 22. disciples. And he saith unto them, Sit ye here, while  
41—44 I go and pray yonder. And he took with him Peter,  
and James and John, the two sons of Zebedee, and  
began to be sorrowful and very heavy. Then saith  
he unto them, My soul is exceeding sorrowful, even  
unto death : tarry ye here, and watch with me. And  
he went a little further, about a stone's cast, and  
fell on his face, and prayed, saying, O my Father,  
if it be possible, let this cup pass from me : never-  
theless, not as I will, but as thou wilt. And, being  
in an agony, he prayed more earnestly ; and his  
sweat was as it were great drops of blood falling  
down to the ground. And there appeared an angel  
unto him from heaven, strengthening him. And he  
Mt. 26. rose up from prayer, and cometh unto the disci-  
40—56  
& ples, and findeth them asleep, and saith unto Peter,  
Mk. 14. 44—52  
& What ! could ye not watch with me one hour ?  
Lk. 22. 47—52  
& Watch and pray, that ye enter not into tempta-  
tion : the spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is

Jn. 18. weak. And he went away again the second time,  
3—12 and prayed, saying, O my Father, if this cup may not pass away from me, except I drink it, thy will be done. And he came and found them asleep again: for their eyes were heavy. And he left them, and went away again, and prayed the third time, saying the same words. Then cometh he to his disciples, and saith unto them, Sleep on now, and take your rest: behold, the hour is at hand, and the Son of man is betrayed into the hands of sinners. Rise, let us be going; behold, he is at hand that doth betray me. And while he yet spake, behold, Judas, one of the twelve, having received a band of men and officers from the chief priests and Pharisees, cometh thither with a great multitude, with lanterns, and torches, and weapons. Now he that betrayed him gave them a sign, saying, Whomsoever I shall kiss, that same is he: hold him fast. Jesus, therefore, knowing all things that should come upon him, went forth, and said unto them, Whom seek ye? They answered him, Jesus of Nazareth. Jesus saith unto them, I am he. As soon then as he had said unto them, I am he, they went backward, and fell to the ground. Then asked he them again, Whom seek ye? And they said, Jesus of Nazareth. Jesus answered, I have told you that I am he. If, therefore, ye seek me, let these go their way; that the saying might be fulfilled, which he spake, Of them which thou gavest me, have I lost none. And forthwith Judas came

to Jesus, and said, Hail, Master, and kissed him. And Jesus said unto him, Friend, wherefore art thou come? Betrayest thou the Son of man with a kiss? Then came they and laid hands on Jesus, and took him and bound him. When they which were about him saw what would follow, they said unto him, Lord, shall we smite with the sword?

Then Simon Peter having a sword, drew it, and smote the high priest's servant, and cut off his right ear. The servant's name was Malchus. And Jesus answered and said, Suffer ye thus far. And he touched his ear, and healed him. *He* then said unto Peter, Put up thy sword into the sheath; for all they that take the sword shall perish with the sword. The cup which my Father hath given me, shall I not drink it? Thinkest thou that I cannot now pray to my Father, and he shall presently give me more than twelve legions of angels? But how then shall the scriptures be fulfilled, that thus it must be? \* In that same hour said Jesus to the multitudes, Are ye come out as against a thief, with swords and staves for to take me? I sat daily with you, teaching in the temple, and ye laid no hold on me. But this is your hour, and the power of darkness. But all this was done, that the scriptures of the prophets might be fulfilled. † Then all the disciples forsook him and fled. And there followed him a certain young man, having a linen cloth cast about

\* Ps. 69 : 20, 21 ; Is. chap. 53.

† Gen. 3 : 15 ; Lam. 4 : 20 ; Dan. 9 : 24—26 , Zech. 13 : 7.

his naked body : and the young men laid hold on him. And he left the linen cloth, and fled from them naked. And *they took Jesus* and led him away to Annas first ; for he was father-in-law to Caiaphas, which was the high priest that same year. And Annas sent him bound unto the high priest ; and they brought him into the high priest's house. Now Caiaphas was he which gave counsel to the Jews, that it was expedient that one man should die for the people.

---

## CHAPTER LXIX.

*Peter denies that he knew Christ — Christ condemned in the council — Is carried to Pilate.*

BUT Peter followed him afar off, unto the high priest's palace. And another disciple also *followed him* ; that disciple was known unto the high priest, and went in with Jesus into the palace of the high priest. But Peter stood at the door without. Then went out that other disciple, which was known unto the high priest, and spake unto her that kept the door, and brought in Peter. And the servants and officers stood there. And when they had kindled a fire of coals (for it was cold), in the midst of the hall, and were set down together, and warmed themselves, Peter sat down with the servants and warmed himself at the fire. And when the damsel that kept the door, saw Peter warming

himself, she looked upon him and said, Art not thou one of this man's disciples? But he denied before them all, saying, I am not; I know not what thou sayest. And he went into the porch, and another saw him, and said unto them that were there, This fellow was also with Jesus of Nazareth. And again he denied with an oath, I do not know the man. And about the space of one hour after, another confidently affirmed, saying to Peter, Surely thou art one of them, for thou art a Galilean, and thy speech agreeth thereto. And *also* one of the servants of the high priest, being *his* kinsman whose ear Peter cut off saith, Did not I see thee in the garden with him? Then began he to curse and to swear, saying, I know not the man of whom ye speak. And immediately the cock crew. And the Lord turned, and looked upon Peter: and Peter remembered the word of the Lord, how he had said unto him, Before the cock crow, thou shalt deny me thrice. And Peter went out, and wept bitterly.

Jn.  
18.19 The high priest then asked Jesus of his disciples,  
20 and of his doctrine. Jesus answered him, I spake openly to the world; I ever taught in the synagogue, and in the temple, whither the Jews always  
21 resort; and in secret have I said nothing. Why askest thou me? Ask them which heard me, what I have said unto them: behold, they know what I  
22 said. And, when he had thus spoken, one of the officers which stood by struck Jesus with the palm of his hand, saying, Answerest thou the high priest



Jn. 18.23 so ? Jesus answered him, If I have spoken evil,  
 bear witness of the evil ; but if well, why smitest  
 Mk. 14.55 thou me ? And the chief priests, and all the coun-  
 cil sought for witness against Jesus to put him to  
 56 death ; and found none : for many bare false wit-  
 Mt. 26.60 ness against him, but their witness agreed not to-  
 26.60 gether. At the last came two false witnesses, and  
 Mk. 14.58 said, We heard him say, I will destroy this temple  
 that is made with hands, and within three days  
 59 I will build another made without hands. But  
 Mt. 26.62 neither so did their witness agree together. And  
 the high priest arose, and said unto him, Answerest  
 thou nothing ? what is it which these witness against  
 63 thee ? But Jesus held his peace. And the high  
 priest answered and said unto him, I adjure thee  
 by the living God, that thou tell us whether thou  
 64 be the Christ, the Son of God : Jesus saith unto  
 them, Ye say that I am ; nevertheless, I say unto  
 you, Hereafter shall ye see the Son of man sitting  
 on the right hand of power, and coming in the  
 65 clouds of heaven. Then the high priest rent his  
 clothes, saying, He hath spoken blasphemy : what  
 further need have we of witnesses ? Behold, now ye  
 66 have heard his blasphemy. What think ye ? They  
 Mt. 26. 67, 68 answered and said, He is guilty of death. Then did  
 & they spit in his face, and buffeted him. And when  
 Mk. 15.1 they had blindfolded him, the servants smote him  
 & with the palms of their hands, saying, Prophecy  
 Jn. 18. 28—38 unto us, thou Christ ! Who is he that smote thee ?  
 And many other things blasphemously spake they

against him. And when the morning was come, the chief priests, with the elders and scribes and the whole council, held a consultation against Jesus to put him to death. And when they had bound him, they led him away unto the judgment-hall, and delivered him unto Pontius Pilate the governor. And it was early; and they themselves went not into the judgment-hall, lest they should be defiled; but that they might eat the passover.

## CHAPTER LXX.

*Christ examined by Pilate, and declared innocent — Is sent to Herod — Sent back to Pilate — After a long examination is declared innocent, but condemned from the influence of the priests and the multitude.*

PILATE then went out unto them, and said, What accusation bring ye against this man? They answered and said unto him, If he were not a malefactor, we would not have delivered him up unto thee. Then said Pilate unto them, Take ye him, and judge him according to your law. The Jews, therefore, said unto him, It is not lawful for us to put any man to death: that the saying of Jesus might be fulfilled, which he spake, signifying what death he should die. And they began to accuse him, saying, We found this fellow perverting the nation, and forbidding to give tribute to Cæsar, saying, That he himself is Christ a king. Then Pilate entered into the judgment-hall, and called Jesus;

Lk. 23.2

Jn.  
18.33

and he stood before the governor. And the governor  
Jn. 18.34 asked him, saying, Art thou the King of the Jews?  
Jesus answered him, Sayest thou this thing of thy-  
35 self, or did others tell it thee of me? Pilate an-  
swered, Am I a Jew? Thine own nation and the  
chief priests have delivered thee unto me. What  
36 hast thou done? Jesus answered, My kingdom is  
not of this world. If my kingdom were of this  
world, then would my servants fight, that I should  
not be delivered to the Jews: but now is my king-  
37 dom not from hence. Pilate, therefore, said unto  
him, Art thou a king then? Jesus answered, Thou  
sayest that I am a king. To this end was I born,  
and for this cause came I into the world, that I  
should bear witness unto the truth. Every one  
38 that is of the truth heareth my voice. Pilate saith  
unto him, What is truth? And when he had said  
this, he went out again unto the Jews, and saith  
Mt. 27.12 unto them, I find in him no fault at all. And when  
he was accused of the chief priest and elders, he  
13 answered nothing. Then said Pilate unto him,  
Hearest thou not how many things they witness  
14 against thee? And he answered him to never a  
word; insomuch that the governor marvelled great-  
Lk. 23.4 ly. Then said Pilate to the chief priests, and to  
5 the people, I find no fault in this man. And they  
were the more fierce, saying, He stirreth up the  
people, teaching throughout all Jewry, beginning  
6 from Galilee to this place. When Pilate heard of  
Galilee, he asked whether the man were a Galilean.

Lk. 23.7 And as soon as he knew that he belonged unto Herod's jurisdiction, he sent him to Herod, who himself was also at Jerusalem at that time. And when Herod saw Jesus, he was exceeding glad : for he was desirous to see him of a long season, because he had heard many things of him ; and he hoped to have seen some miracle done by him. Then he questioned with him in many words ; but he answered him nothing. And the chief priests and scribes stood, and vehemently accused him. And Herod with his men of war set him at naught, and mocked him, and arrayed him in a gorgeous robe, and sent him again to Pilate.

12 And the same day Pilate and Herod were made friends together : for before they were at enmity between themselves.

13 And Pilate, when he had called together the chief priests, and the rulers, and the people, said unto them, Ye have brought this man unto me, as one that perverteth the people : and, behold, I, having examined him before you, have found no fault in this man, touching those things whereof ye accuse him : no, nor yet Herod : for I sent you to him ; and, lo, nothing worthy of death is done unto him : I will, therefore, chastise him, and re-

Mt. 27. 16—30 lease him. For *they* had a custom that, at the  
& Mk. 15. 6—16 passover, he should release unto them one prisoner,  
& whomsoever they desired. And they had then a  
Lk. 23. 18—25 notable prisoner, named Barabbas, which lay bound  
Jn. 18.39 with them that had made insurrection with him,

who had committed murder in the insurrection. And the multitude, crying aloud, began to desire him to do as he had ever done unto them. But Pilate answered them, saying, Whom will ye that I release unto you? Barabbas, or Jesus, whom ye call the King of the Jews? For he knew that the chief priests had delivered him for envy.

When he was set down on the judgment-seat, his wife sent unto him, saying, Have thou nothing to do with that just man: for I have suffered many things this day in a dream because of him. But the chief priests and elders persuaded the multitude that they should ask Barabbas, and destroy Jesus. The governor answered *again*, and said unto them, Whether of the twain will ye that I release unto you? And they cried out all at once, saying, Away with this man, and release unto us Barabbas: Pilate, therefore, willing to release Jesus, saith unto them, What shall I do then with Jesus, which is called Christ? They all say unto him, Let him be crucified. And he said unto them, Why? what evil hath he done? I have found no cause of death in him: I will therefore chastise him, and let him go. And they were instant with loud voices, requiring that he might be crucified. When Pilate saw that he could prevail nothing, but that rather a tumult was made, he took water, and washed his hands, before the multitude, saying, I am innocent of the blood of this just person; see ye to it. Then answered all the people, and said,



His blood be on us, and on our children. And Pilate gave sentence that it should be as they required. And he released unto them him that for sedition and murder was cast into prison, whom they had desired. And when he had scourged Jesus, he delivered him to their will. Then the soldiers of the governor led him away into the common hall called Prætorium; and they called together the whole band. And they stripped him, and put on him a scarlet robe. And when they had platted a crown of thorns, they put it upon his head, and a reed in his right hand: and they bowed the knee before him, and mocked him, saying, Hail, King of the Jews! And they spit upon him, and took the reed, and smote him on the head.

Jn. 19.4 Pilate, therefore, went forth again, and saith unto them, Behold, I bring him forth to you, that  
5 ye may know that I find no fault in him. Then came Jesus forth, wearing the crown of thorns, and the purple robe. And Pilate saith unto them,  
6 Behold the man! When the chief priests, therefore, and officers saw him, they cried out, saying, Crucify him, crucify him. Pilate saith unto them, Take ye him, and crucify him: for I find no fault  
7 in him. The Jews answered him, We have a law, and by our law he ought to die, because he made himself the Son of God.

8 When Pilate therefore heard that saying, he was  
9 the more afraid; and went again into the judgment-hall, and saith unto Jesus, Whence art thou?



- Jn.19.10 But Jesus gave him no answer. Then saith Pilate unto him, Speakest thou not unto me? Knowest thou not that I have power to crucify thee, and  
11 have power to release thee? Jesus answered, Thou couldst have no power at all against me, except it were given thee from above; therefore he that de-  
12 livered me unto thee hath the greater sin. And from thenceforth Pilate sought to release him; but the Jews cried out, saying, If thou let this man go, thou art not Cæsar's friend; whosoever maketh himself a king, speaketh against Cæsar.
- 13 When Pilate, therefore, heard that saying, he brought Jesus forth, and sat down in the judgment-seat, in a place that is called the Pavement, but in  
14 the Hebrew, Gabbatha. And it was the preparation of the passover, and about the sixth hour; and he saith unto the Jews, Behold your King!  
15 But they cried out, Away with him, away with him, crucify him. Pilate saith unto them, Shall I crucify your King? The chief priests answered,  
16 We have no king but Cæsar. Then delivered he him, therefore, unto them, to be crucified.
- 

## CHAPTER LXXI.

*Judas returns the money and hangs himself — Christ is led away to be crucified — Women lament him.*

- Mt.27.3 THEN Judas, which had betrayed him, when he saw that he was condemned, repented himself, and

brought again the thirty pieces of silver to the  
 Mt.27.4 chief priests and elders, saying, I have sinned, in  
 that I have betrayed the innocent blood. And  
 they said, What is that to us? see thou to that.  
 5 And he cast down the pieces of silver in the tem-  
 ple, and departed, and went and hanged himself.  
 6 And the chief priests took the silver pieces, and  
 said, It is not lawful for to put them into the treas-  
 7 ury, because it is the price of blood. And they  
 took counsel, and bought with them the potter's  
 8 field to bury strangers in. Wherefore that field  
 was called, The field of blood, unto this day.  
 9 Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by Jer-  
 emiah the prophet, saying,\* And they took the  
 thirty pieces of silver, the price of him that was  
 valued, whom they of the children of Israel did  
 10 value; and gave them for the potter's field, as the  
 Lord appointed me.

Mt.27. And after that they had mocked him, they took  
 31—34 the robe off from him, and put his own raiment on  
 & him, and led him away to crucify him. And *Jesus*  
 Lk.23. *went forth* bearing his cross. And, as they came out,  
 26—32 &  
 Jn.19. they laid hold upon one Simon a Cyrenian, the  
 16.17 father of Alexander and Rufus, coming out of the  
 country; and on him they laid the cross, that he  
 might bear it after Jesus. And there followed him  
 a great company of people, and of women, which  
 also bewailed and lamented him. But Jesus, turn-  
 ing unto them, said, Daughters of Jerusalem, weep

\* Zech. 11 : 12, 13.

not for me, but weep for yourselves, and for your children. For, behold, the days are coming, in the which they shall say, Blessed are the barren, and the wombs that never bare, and the paps which never gave suck. Then shall they begin to say to the mountains, Fall on us ; and to the hills, Cover us.\* For if they do these things in a green tree, what shall be done in the dry ?

And there were also two others, malefactors, led with him to be put to death.

And when they were come unto a place called Calvary, which is called in the Hebrew, Golgotha, that is to say, A place of a skull, they gave him vinegar to drink, mingled with gall ; † and, when he had tasted thereof, he would not drink.

Mt. 27. And it was *about* the third hour, and they cruci-  
35—36  
& fied him and the two thieves with him, one on his  
Mk. 15. right hand, and the other on his left, and Jesus in  
24—28  
& the midst. And the Scripture was fulfilled, which  
Lk. saith, And he was numbered with the transgres-  
23.34  
& sors. ‡

Jn. 19. Then said Jesus, Father, forgive them ; for they  
18—24 know not what they do.

Then the soldiers, when they had crucified Jesus, took his garments, and made four parts, to every soldier a part, and also his coat ; now the coat was without seam, woven from the top throughout. They said, therefore, among themselves, Let us not rend it, but cast lots for it, whose it shall be ; that

\* Hosea 10 : 8.

† Ps. 69 : 21.

‡ Is. 53 : 12.

it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, They parted my garments among them, and upon my vesture did they cast lots.\* And sitting down, they watched him there.

And Pilate wrote a title, and put it on the cross. And the writing was, JESUS OF NAZARETH, THE KING OF THE JEWS. This title then read many of the Jews ; for the place where Jesus was crucified was nigh to the city ; and it was written in Hebrew, and Greek, and Latin. Then said the chief priests of the Jews to Pilate, Write not, The King of the Jews ; but that he said, I am King of the Jews. Pilate answered, What I have written, I have written.

Mt. 27.39 And they that passed by reviled him, wagging  
40 their heads, and saying, Thou that destroyest the temple, and buildest it in three days, save thyself.

If thou be the Son of God, come down from the  
41 cross. Likewise also the chief priests mocking  
42 him, with the scribes and elders, said, He saved others ; himself he cannot save. If he be Christ, the King of Israel, let him now come down from  
43 the cross, and we will believe him. He trusted in God ; let him deliver him now, if he will have him ;

Lk. 23.36 for he said, I am the Son of God.† And the soldiers also mocked him, coming to him, and offering  
37 him vinegar, and saying, If thou be the king of the Jews, save thyself.

39 And one of the malefactors, which were hanged,

\* Ps. 22 : 18. † Ps. 22 : 8, and 42 : 10, and 71 : 11.

railed on him, saying, If thou be Christ, save thy-  
 Lk.23.40 self and us. But the other answering, rebuked him,  
 saying, Dost not thou fear God, seeing thou art in  
 41 the same condemnation? And we indeed justly;  
 for we receive the due reward of our deeds; but  
 42 this man hath done nothing amiss. And he said  
 unto Jesus, Lord, remember me when thou comest  
 43 into thy kingdom. And Jesus said unto him,  
 Verily I say unto thee, To-day shalt thou be with  
 me in paradise.

Jn.19.25 Now there stood by the cross of Jesus, his  
 mother, and his mother's sister, Mary, the wife of  
 Cleophas, and mother of James the less, and Joses,  
 26 and Mary Magdalene. When Jesus, therefore, saw  
 his mother, and the disciples standing by, whom he  
 loved, he saith unto his mother, Woman, behold  
 27 thy son! Then saith he to the disciple, Behold  
 thy mother! And from that hour that disciple  
 took her unto his own home.

Mk. And, when the sixth hour was come, there was  
 15.33 darkness over the whole land until the ninth hour.  
 34 And, at the ninth hour, Jesus cried with a loud  
 voice, saying, Eloi, Eloi, lama sabachthani? which  
 is, being interpreted, My God, my God, why hast  
 35 thou forsaken me? \* And some of them that stood  
 by, when they heard it, said, Behold, he calleth  
 36 Elijah. Let alone; let us see whether Elijah will  
 come to take him down.

Jn.19.28 After this, Jesus knowing that all things were

\* Ps. 22: 1.

now accomplished, that the Scripture might be fulfilled, saith, I thirst. Now there was set a vessel  
Jn.19.29 full of vinegar; and they filled a sponge with vinegar, and put it upon a reed, and put it to his  
& Lk.23.46 mouth.\* When Jesus, therefore, had received the vinegar, he cried with a loud voice, IT IS FINISHED. He *then* said, Father, into thy hands I commend my spirit; and, having thus said, he bowed his head, and gave up the ghost.

---

## CHAPTER LXXII.

*There is an earthquake, and the graves open, &c. — The soldiers break the legs of the thieves, but pierce Christ with a spear — He is taken down from the cross and laid in the sepulchre.*

Mt.27. AND, behold, the vail of the temple was rent in  
51—54 twain, from the top to the bottom; and the earth  
& Mk.15. did quake, and the rocks rent; and the graves were  
39—41 opened; and many bodies of the saints which slept arose, and came out of the graves after his resurrection, and went into the holy city, and appeared unto many. Now, when the centurion, and they that were with him, watching Jesus, saw the earthquake, and those things that were done, and that he so cried out, and gave up the ghost, they feared greatly, saying, Truly this was the Son of God. And the women were looking on afar off; among

\* Ps. 69 : 21.



whom also was Salome the mother of Zebedee's children, who also, when he was in Galilee, followed him, and ministered unto him; and many other women which came up with him unto Jerusalem.

Jn. 19. The Jews, therefore, because it was the preparation,  
31—42 & ation, that is, the day before the Sabbath, that the  
Mt. 27. bodies should not remain upon the cross on the  
57—60 & Sabbath-day, for that Sabbath-day was a high day,  
Mk. 15. besought Pilate that their legs might be broken,  
42—47 & and that they might be taken away. Then came  
Lk. 23. the soldiers, and brake the legs of the first, and of  
50—56 the other which was crucified with him. But when they came to Jesus, and saw that he was dead already, they brake not his legs; but one of the soldiers with a spear pierced his side, and forthwith came there out blood and water. And he that saw it bear record, and his record is true; and he knoweth that he saith true, that ye might believe. For these things were done, that the Scripture should be fulfilled, A bone of him shall not be broken.\* And again, another Scripture saith, They shall look on him whom they pierced.† And now when the even was come, there came a rich man named Joseph of Arimathea, a city of the Jews; an honorable counsellor,‡ who also waited for the kingdom of God. He was a good man, and a just, the same had not consented to the counsel and deed of them, *being* himself a disciple of Jesus; but

\* Ex. 12 : 46 ; Ps. 34 : 20. † Ps. 22 : 16 ; Zech. 12 : 10. ‡ Is. 53 : 9.

secretly, for fear of the Jews; and he went in boldly unto Pilate, and craved the body of Jesus. And Pilate marvelled if he were already dead: and, calling unto him the centurion, he asked him whether he had been any while dead. And when he knew it of the centurion, he gave the body to Joseph. And he bought fine linen, and took him down. *At that time* came also Nicodemus, which at the first came to Jesus by night, and brought a mixture of myrrh and aloes, about a hundred pounds' weight. Then took they the body of Jesus, and wound it in linen clothes with the spices, as the manner of the Jews is to bury. Now, in the place where he was crucified, there was a garden; and in the garden was Joseph's new sepulchre, hewn out in the rock, wherein was never man yet laid. There laid they Jesus, therefore, because of the Jews' preparation-day, for the sepulchre was nigh at hand. And they rolled a stone unto the door of the sepulchre, and departed. And Mary Magdalene and Mary the mother of Joses followed after, and beheld the sepulchre, and how his body was laid.

And they returned, and prepared spices and ointment; and rested the Sabbath-day, according to the commandment.

## CHAPTER LXXIII.

*A watch set at the sepulchre — There is an earthquake — Women come to the sepulchre, and find the stone rolled away and the body of Christ gone — Mary Magdalene runs to inform the disciples — Christ shows himself to the other women — Peter and John go to the sepulchre — Mary goes with them — They return, but Mary remains, and Christ shows himself to her.*

- Mt. Now the next day, that followed the day of the  
 27.62 preparation, the chief priests and Pharisees came  
 63 together unto Pilate, saying, Sir, we remember that  
 that deceiver said, while he was yet alive, After  
 64 three days I will rise again. Command, therefore,  
 that the sepulchre be made sure until the third day,  
 lest his disciples come by night and steal him away,  
 and say unto the people, He is risen from the dead :  
 65 so the last error shall be worse than the first. Pilate  
 said unto them, Ye have a watch ; go your way, make  
 66 it as sure as ye can. So they went, and made the  
 sepulchre sure, sealing the stone, and setting a watch.
- Mt. 28. And when the Sabbath was past, as it began to  
 1—17 dawn toward the first day of the week, behold,  
 & Mk. 16. there was a great earthquake : for the angel of the  
 1—7 Lord descended from heaven, and came and rolled  
 & Jk. 24. back the stone from the door, and sat upon it. His  
 1—8 countenance was like lightning, and his raiment  
 & Jn. 20. white as snow : and for fear of him the keepers did  
 1—2 shake, and became as dead men. Then came Mary  
 Magdalene and Mary the mother of James, and

Salome, very early in the morning, unto the sepulchre, bringing the spices which they had prepared, and Joanna and certain others were with them. And they said among themselves, Who shall roll us away the stone from the door of the sepulchre? And when they looked, they saw that the stone was rolled away, for it was very great. And they entered in, and found not the body of the Lord Jesus. Then Mary Magdalene *runneth into the city*, and cometh to Simon Peter, and to the other disciple, whom Jesus loved, and saith unto them, They have taken away the Lord out of the sepulchre, and we know not where they have laid him. *And it came to pass as the other women were at the sepulchre*, and were much perplexed thereabout, they saw a young man, sitting on the right side, clothed in a long white garment; and they were affrighted.

And he saith unto them, Be not affrighted; for I know that ye seek Jesus which was crucified. But why seek ye the living among the dead? He is not here, but is risen as he said. Come see the place where the Lord lay. Remember how he spake unto you when he was yet in Galilee, saying, The Son of man must be delivered into the hands of sinful men, and be crucified, and the third day rise again. And they remembered his words. *And he said unto them*, Go your way, tell his disciples and Peter, that he is risen from the dead, and behold, he goeth before you into Galilee; there shall

Mt. 28.8 ye see him : lo, I have told you. And they departed quickly from the sepulchre, with fear and great joy ; and did run to bring his disciples word.

9 And, as they went to tell his disciples, behold, Jesus met them, saying, All hail ! And they came and held him by the feet, and worshipped him.

10 Then said Jesus unto them, Be not afraid : go tell my brethren, that they go into Galilee, and there

Lk. 24.9 shall they see me. And they told all these things  
11 unto the eleven, and to all the rest. And their words seemed to them as idle tales, and they believed them not.

Mt. 28.11 Now, when they were going, behold, some of the watch came into the city, and showed unto the  
12 chief priests all the things that were done. And when they were assembled with the elders, and had taken counsel, they gave large money unto the soldiers, saying, Say ye, His disciples came by night,  
13 and stole him away while we slept. And if this come to the governor's ears, we will peruse him,  
14 and secure you. So they took the money, and did as they were taught : and this saying is commonly reported among the Jews until this day.

Jn. 20.3 Then Peter, therefore, went forth, and that other  
4 disciple, and came to the sepulchre. So they ran both together ; and the other disciple did outrun Peter,  
5 and came first to the sepulchre. And he stooping down, and looking in, saw the linen clothes lying :  
6 yet went he not in. Then cometh Simon Peter, following him, and went into the sepulchre, and



Jn. 20.7 seeth the linen clothes lie ; and the napkin that was about his head, not lying with the linen clothes, 8 but wrapped together in a place by itself. Then went in also that other disciple, which came first to 9 the sepulchre, and he saw, and believed. For as yet they knew not the scripture, that he must rise 10 again from the dead. Then the disciples went away again unto their own home.

11 But Mary Magdalene, *who had followed them*, stood without at the sepulchre weeping : and, as she wept, she stooped down, and looked into the 12 sepulchre, and seeth two angels in white, sitting, the one at the head, and the other at the feet, where 13 the body of Jesus had lain. And they say unto her, Woman, why weepest thou ? She saith unto them, Because they have taken away my Lord, and 14 I know not where they have laid him. And when she had thus said, she turned herself back, and saw Jesus standing, and knew not that it was Jesus. 15 Jesus saith unto her, Woman, why weepest thou ? whom seekest thou ? She, supposing him to be the gardener, saith unto him, Sir, if thou have borne him hence, tell me where thou hast laid him, and I 16 will take him away. Jesus saith unto her, Mary. She turned herself, and saith unto him, Rabboni : 17 which is to say, Master. Jesus saith unto her, Touch me not ; for I am not yet ascended to my Father ; but go to my brethren, and say unto them, I ascend unto my Father, and your Father ; and to 18 my God, and your God. Mary came and told the



disciples as they mourned and wept, that she had seen the Lord, and that he had spoken these things unto her. And when they had heard that he was <sup>Mk.</sup> 16.11 alive, and had been seen of her, they believed not.

## CHAPTER LXXIV.

*Christ shows himself to two of his disciples at Emmaus — He appears in the room with his disciples — Thomas doubts.*

<sup>Lk.</sup> 24.13 AND, behold, two of them went that same day to a village called Emmaus, which was from Jerusalem about threescore furlongs. And they talked together of all these things which had happened. 14 And it came to pass, that while they communed together, and reasoned, Jesus himself drew near, 15 and went with them. But their eyes were holden, 16 that they should not know him. And he said unto them, What manner of communications are these that ye have one to another, as ye walk, and are 17 sad? And the one of them, whose name was Cleophas, answering, said unto him, Art thou only a stranger in Jerusalem, and hast not known the things which are come to pass there in these days? 18 And he said unto them, What things? And they said unto him, Concerning Jesus of Nazareth, which was a prophet mighty in deed and word before God 19 and all the people: and how the chief priests and our rulers delivered him to be condemned to death,

Lk. and have crucified him. But we trusted that it  
24.21 had been he which should have redeemed Israel :  
and, beside all this, to-day is the third day since  
22 these things were done. Yea, and certain women  
also of our company made us astonished, which  
23 were early at the sepulchre ; and when they found  
not his body, they came, saying, That they had also  
seen a vision of angels, which said that he was  
24 alive. And certain of them which were with us  
went to the sepulchre, and found it even so as the  
25 women had said ; but him they saw not. Then he  
said unto them, O fools, and slow of heart to believe  
26 all that the prophets have spoken ! Ought not  
Christ to have suffered these things, and to enter  
27 into his glory ? And beginning at Moses and all  
the prophets, he expounded unto them in all the  
28 scriptures the things concerning himself. And they  
drew nigh unto the village whither they went : and  
he made as though he would have gone further.  
29 But they constrained him, saying, Abide with us :  
for it is toward evening, and the day is far spent.  
30 And he went in to tarry with them. And it came  
to pass, as he sat at meat with them, he took  
bread, and blessed it, and brake, and gave to them.  
31 And their eyes were opened, and they knew him :  
32 and he vanished out of their sight. And they said  
one to another, Did not our heart burn within us,  
while he talked with us by the way, and while he  
33 opened to us the scriptures ? And they rose up  
the same hour, and returned to Jerusalem, and

found the eleven gathered together, and them that  
<sup>Lk. 24.34</sup> were with them, saying, the Lord is risen indeed,  
<sup>35</sup> and hath appeared to Simon. And they told what  
<sup>Jn. 20.19</sup> things were done in the way, and how he was known  
of them in breaking of bread. And as they thus  
spake, the doors *being* shut where they were assem-  
<sup>Lk. 24.36</sup> bled, for fear of the Jews, Jesus himself stood in  
the midst of them, and saith unto them, Peace be  
<sup>37</sup> unto you. But they were terrified and affrighted,  
<sup>38</sup> and supposed that they had seen a spirit. And he  
said unto them, Why are ye troubled? and why do  
<sup>39</sup> thoughts arise in your hearts? Behold my hands  
and my feet, that it is I myself: handle me, and  
see; for a spirit hath not flesh and bones, as ye see  
<sup>40</sup> me have. And when he had thus spoken, he showed  
<sup>Jn. 20.20</sup> them his hands and his feet and his side. Then were  
<sup>Lk. 24.41</sup> the disciples glad when they saw the Lord. But  
while they yet believed not for joy, and wondered,  
<sup>42</sup> he said unto them, Have ye here any meat? And  
they gave him a piece of a broiled fish, and of a  
<sup>43</sup> honey-comb. And he took it, and did eat before  
<sup>44</sup> them. And he said unto them, These are the words  
which I spake unto you, while I was yet with you,  
that all things must be fulfilled, which were written  
in the law of Moses, and in the prophets, and in  
<sup>45</sup> the Psalms, concerning me. Then opened he their  
understanding, that they might understand the scrip-  
<sup>46</sup> tures, and said unto them, Thus it is written, and  
thus it behoved Christ to suffer, and to rise from  
<sup>47</sup> the dead the third day; and that repentance and

Lk. remission of sins should be preached in his name  
24.48 among all nations, beginning at Jerusalem. And  
Jn.  
20.21 ye are witnesses of these things. As my Father  
hath sent me, even so send I you.

24 But Thomas, one of the twelve, called Didymus,  
25 was not with them when Jesus came. The other  
disciples, therefore, said unto him, We have seen  
the Lord. But he said unto them, Except I shall  
see in his hands the print of the nails, and put my  
finger into the print of the nails, and thrust my  
hand into his side, I will not believe.

26 And after eight days, again his disciples were  
within, and Thomas with them. Then came Jesus,  
the doors being shut, and stood in the midst, and  
Mk. said, Peace be unto you. And he upbraided them  
16.14 with their unbelief and hardness of heart, because  
Jn. they believed not them which had seen him after he  
20.27 was risen. Then saith he to Thomas, Reach hither  
thy finger, and behold my hands; and reach hither  
thy hand, and thrust it into my side: and be not  
28 faithless, but believing. And Thomas answered  
29 and said unto him, My Lord, and my God. Jesus  
saith unto him, Thomas, because thou has seen me,  
thou hast believed: blessed are they that have not  
seen, and yet have believed.

## CHAPTER LXXV.

*Christ at the sea of Galilee — Draught of fishes — Questions Peter as to his love — Meets a large body of disciples on the mount — The apostles return to Jerusalem — Are commissioned — Christ ascends to heaven.*

Mt.  
28.16 THEN the eleven disciples went away into Galilee;  
Ju. 21.1 and Jesus showed himself again unto them at the sea of Tiberias; and on this wise showed he himself. There were together Simon Peter, and Thomas called Didymus, and Nathanael of Cana in Galilee, and the sons of Zebedee, and two other of his disciples. Simon Peter saith unto them, I go a fishing. They say unto him, We also go with thee. They went forth, and entered into a ship immediately; and that night they caught nothing. But when the morning was now come, Jesus stood on the shore: but the disciples knew not that it was Jesus. Then Jesus saith unto them, Children, have ye any meat? They answered him, No. And he said unto them, Cast the net on the right side of the ship, and ye shall find. They cast, therefore, and now they were not able to draw it for the multitude of fishes. Therefore that disciple whom Jesus loved, saith unto Peter, It is the Lord. Now, when Simon Peter heard that it was the Lord, he girt his fisher's coat unto him, for he was naked, and did cast himself into the sea. And the other disciples came in a little ship, for they were not



far from land, but as it were two hundred cubits,  
Jn. 21.9 dragging the net with fishes. As soon then as they  
were come to land, they saw a fire of coals there,  
10 and fish laid thereon, and bread. Jesus saith unto  
them, Bring of the fish which ye have now caught.  
11 Simon Peter went up, and drew the net to land full  
of great fishes, a hundred and fifty and three; and  
for all there were so many, yet was not the net  
broken.

12 Jesus saith unto them, Come and dine. And  
none of the disciples durst ask him, Who art thou?  
13 knowing that it was the Lord. Jesus then cometh,  
and taketh bread, and giveth them, and fish like-  
14 wise. This is now the third time that Jesus showed  
himself to his disciples, after that he was risen from  
the dead.

15 So, when they had dined, Jesus saith to Simon  
Peter, Simon, son of Jonas, lovest thou me more  
than these? He saith unto him, Yea, Lord; thou  
knowest that I love thee. He saith unto him, Feed  
16 my lambs. He saith unto him again the second  
time, Simon, son of Jonas, lovest thou me? He  
saith unto him, Yea, Lord; thou knowest that I  
love thee. He saith unto him, Feed my sheep.  
17 He saith unto him the third time, Simon, son of  
Jonas, lovest thou me? Peter was grieved because  
he said unto him the third time, Lovest thou me?  
And he said unto him, Lord, thou knowest all  
things; thou knowest that I love thee. Jesus saith  
18 unto him, Feed my sheep. Verily, verily, I say



unto thee, When thou wast young, thou girdedst thyself, and walkedst whither thou wouldst : but when thou shalt be old, thou shalt stretch forth thy hands, and another shall gird thee, and carry thee  
 Jn. 21. 19 whither thou wouldst not. This spake he signifying by what death he should glorify God. And, when he had spoken this, he saith unto him, Follow  
 20 me. Then Peter, turning about, seeth the disciple whom Jesus loved following ; which also leaned on his breast at supper, and said, Lord, which is he  
 21 that betrayeth thee ? Peter seeing him, saith to 22 Jesus, Lord, and what shall this man do ? Jesus saith unto him, If I will that he tarry till I come, 23 what is that to thee ? Follow thou me. Then went this saying abroad among the brethren, that that disciple should not die : yet Jesus said not unto him, He shall not die ; but, If I will that he tarry  
 Mt. 28. till I come, what is that to thee ?  
 16, 17 After that, the disciples went up into a mountain  
 1 Cor. 15. 6 where Jesus had appointed them. *There* he was seen of above five hundred brethren at once. And when they saw him, they worshipped him, but some doubted.  
*And the disciples returned again to Jerusalem.* And  
 Mt. 28. Jesus came and spake unto them, saying, All power  
 18—20 is given unto me in heaven and in earth. Go ye,  
 & Mk. 16. 15—22 *therefore*, into all the world, and preach the gospel to every creature, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost : teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you. He that believeth and is

baptized shall be saved ; but he that believeth not shall be damned. And these signs shall follow them that believe : In my name shall they cast out devils ; they shall speak with new tongues ; they shall take up serpents ; and if they drink any deadly thing, it shall not hurt them ; they shall lay hands on the sick, and they shall recover. And lo, I am with you always, even unto the end of the world.

Lk. And, behold, I send the promise of my Father  
24.49 upon you : but tarry ye in the city of Jerusalem,  
Jn. until ye be endued with power from on high. And  
20.22 when he had said this, he breathed on them, and saith unto them, Receive ye the Holy Ghost :  
23 whose soever sins ye remit, they are remitted unto them ; and whose soever sins ye retain, they are retained.

Lk. And he led them out as far as to Bethany, and  
24.50  
51 he lifted up his hands, and blessed them. And it came to pass, while he blessed them, he was parted  
Acts 1.9 from them, and carried up into heaven, and a cloud received him out of their sight.

10 And, while they looked steadfastly toward heaven, as he went up, behold, two men stood by them in  
11 white apparel ; which also said, Ye men of Galilee, why stand ye gazing up into heaven ? This same Jesus, which is taken up from you into heaven, shall so come in like manner as ye have seen him

Lk. go into heaven. And they worshipped him, and re-  
24.52  
53 turned to Jerusalem with great joy : and were continually in the temple, praising and blessing God.

Jn. 20. And there are many other things and signs truly,  
30, 31 which Jesus did in the presence of his disciples,  
& 21. 25 which are not written in this book ; the which, if  
they should be written every one, I suppose that  
even the world itself could not contain the books  
that should be written. But these are written that  
ye might believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son  
of God ; and, that believing, ye might have life  
through his name.

Mk. And when *Pentecost was past*, the disciples went  
16.20 forth, and preached everywhere, the Lord working  
with them and confirming the word with signs  
following. Amen.

















BT  
299

LIBRARY OF CONGRESS



0 021 066 117 7